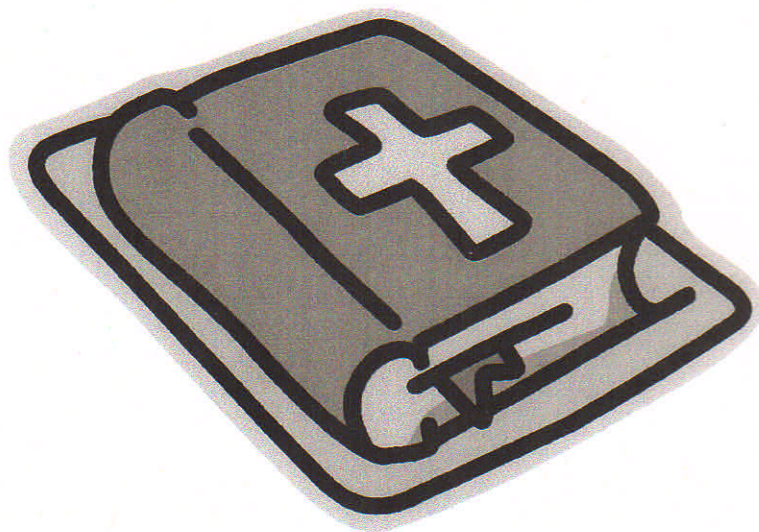


The Tyndale

Equipping The Saints Discipleship Manual



Division I

The Basics

Workbook

Table of contents

Front Cover	3
A Word from the Author.....	7
The Process at a Glance.....	9
Chapter One - Salvation	15
Chapter Two - Assurance.....	25
Chapter Three - Daily Time with God.....	37
Chapter Four - Prayer Life	45
Chapter Five - Personal Bible Study.....	56
Chapter Six - Scripture Memorization	71
Chapter Seven - Confession of Sin	79
Chapter Eight - Dealing with Temptation	87
Chapter Nine - The Spirit-filled Life.....	99
Chapter Ten - Obedience.....	109
Chapter Eleven - God's Discipline	119
Chapter Twelve - Developing Godly Habits of Living.....	129
Chapter Thirteen - Knowing God's Will	149
Chapter Fourteen - Stewardship.....	153
Chapter Fifteen - The Church.....	165
Appendix - Positional vs. Experiential.....	179
Appendix - Answers to Chapters and Self-Test.....	181

Empowering The Saints

DISCIPLINE MANUAL



DIVISION I

The Basics

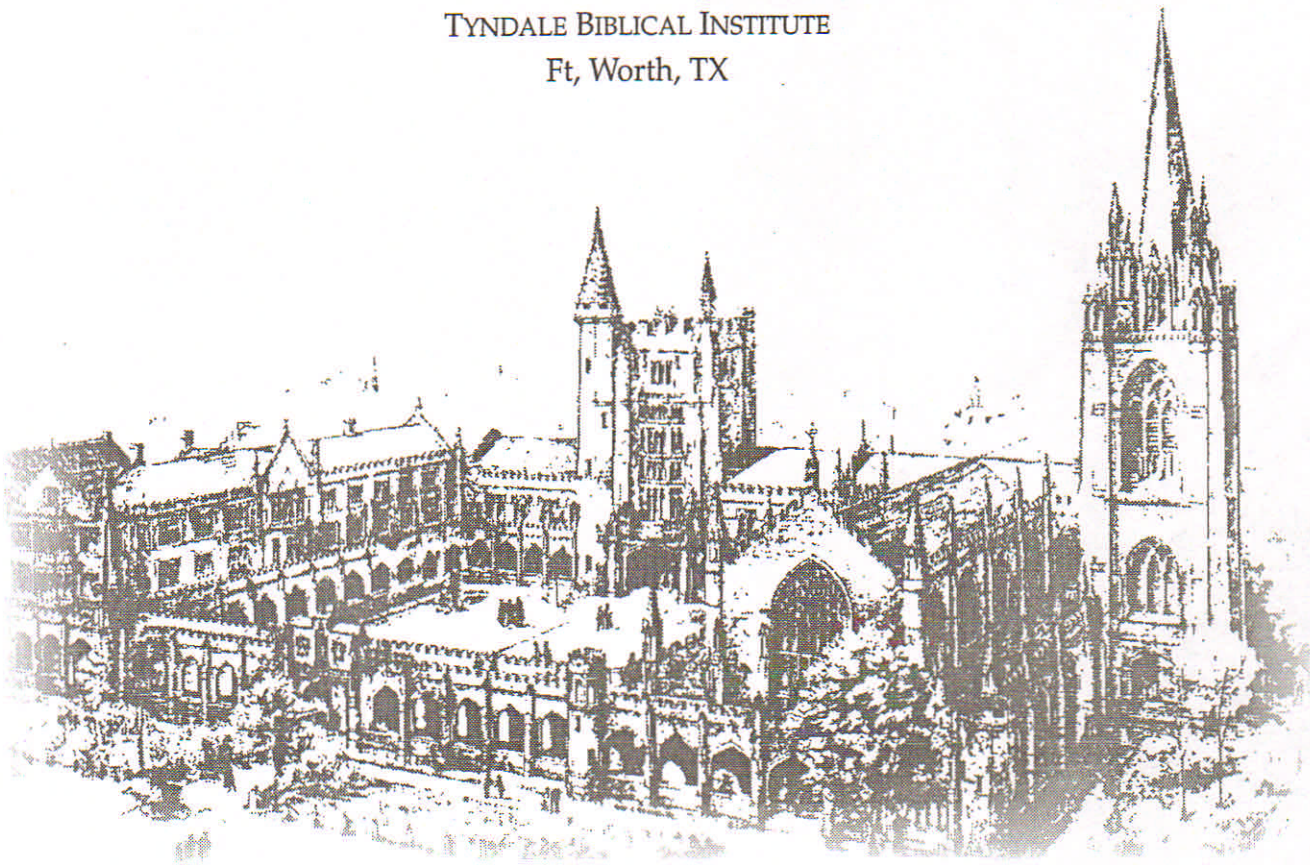
Respectful Behavior



EQUIPPING THE SAINTS
The Process of Making Disciples
RUSSELL L. PENNY, DR.SC., TH.D.

EQUIPPING THE SAINTS
The Process of Making Disciples
Copyright ©1996
TYNDALE BIBLICAL INSTITUTE

Published by
TYNDALE BIBLICAL INSTITUTE
Ft, Worth, TX



Unless otherwise noted, Scripture quotations are from the *New American Standard Bible*.
© The Lockman Foundation 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1975, 1977.
Other quotations are from the *King James Version* (KJV)

Equipping The Saints
Discipleship Curriculum
Lesson 1: Power Of The Holy Spirit

Equipping The Saints
Discipleship Curriculum
Lesson 2: The Holy Spirit
The Holy Spirit's Work

Equipping The Saints
Discipleship Curriculum
Lesson 3: The Holy Spirit
The Holy Spirit's Work

A Word From The Author

Imagine a Discipleship Program that takes a new Christian through such basics as salvation, assurance, prayer, Bible study, etc. to a solid grounding in essential Bible doctrine and then on to learn practical ministry skills such as sharing his or her testimony, friendship evangelism and defending the faith. Imagine no more! Tyndale Seminary is proud to announce the *Equipping The Saints* discipleship program.

This discipleship program was birthed out of the frustration of my own personal experience. I grew up in solid evangelical churches as far as preaching the gospel and having a strong evangelical doctrinal statement is concerned. There was a lot of "preaching" out of the pulpit but very little systematic teaching. In addition, the Sunday school curriculum was written on a very low doctrinal level and again it was rarely systematic. New converts classes were rare or non-existent. As a result of these factors, I was a spiritual "runt" at 27 (having been saved at 12). Although my family did not normally attend church every Sunday, we did attend frequently. During my attendance I learned the facts of the gospel well, in fact, almost every time I attended church a gospel message was preached. The problem was that I was already "spiritually birthed," now I needed some milk. Even when I did attend Sunday School it was a potpourri of topics. There was nothing available that would systematically teach me the basics of the Christian faith, basic Bible knowledge, and ministry skills that I would need to live an abundant and fruitful Christian life.

It was not until I came in contact with Christian radio and had the opportunity to listen to such Bible teachers as J. Vernon McGee, Warren Wiersbe, Chuck Swindoll, and John MacArthur Jr. that I began to grow. After about a year of learning under these men I started seminary and continued to feed on God's "meaty" word. For the first time I understood such things as "imputed righteousness," "propitiation," and "sanctification." Even basic things like "knowing God's will" and "stewardship" I didn't learn until seminary, although I had been a Christian for over 15 years. I often thought of the people sitting in the pews of those churches that had been Christians for 20, 30, or 40+ years and yet still would struggle with explaining some of the above doctrinal truth. Because doctrinal truth is the foundation of an abundant spiritual life, I knew they were missing out on what God had for them. This is the burden from which came my burning desire to see new Christians have the chance to get solid foundations built under their Christian lives. This is the burden that prompted me to write *Equipping The Saints*.

Although the program can be used in a new converts class, a Sunday school class or simply a Bible study, it was designed for something more relational. In the



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. " him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, "and teach everywhere I have commanded you.

New Testament Jesus Christ left us an excellent pattern of disciple-making. He chose twelve men into whom He poured His life. He taught them by word and example. The Apostle Paul did the same with Timothy, Titus and others. The new Christian will grow more quickly if he has someone living a godly life out before him; someone who is devoted to encourage him when he struggles and correct, teach and guide him in his growth. And also, someone to show sincere love and commitment to him. This is what discipleship is all about.

The Great Commission tells us that the process of making disciples involves two things, which are baptizing and teaching (Matt. 28:19-20). Both of these are equally important in the disciple-making process, but do they receive equal attention at our churches? Bill Hull in his book *Jesus Christ Disciple-Maker* states the following, "Since indeed discipleship is the primary thrust of the commission the Church has been given, we must stop tacking it on our existing structure as a subordinate program in order to ease our guilt. Discipleship must function as the heart of church ministry. In fact, most programs should be evaluated in light of whether or not they are in some way contributing toward developing disciples."

Pastors and elders of churches should be constantly involved in making disciples of young men to fill their positions in the future or to fill positions of leadership in other churches (like Paul and Christ did), laymen should be making disciples of laymen, and fathers should be making disciples of their children. It is time the church got back to doing what it was called to do. Contrary to popular opinion the Church was nowhere commissioned to entertain the saints or cater to unbelievers. It was called to go into the world and make disciples. It is for this reason that *Equipping The Saints* was created.

It is my hope that as a result of this curriculum fewer Christians will have to struggle through the battle with only half of their armor. May it be used for God's glory through "equipping the saints for the work of the service, to the building up of the body of Christ" (Eph. 4:12).

Dr. Russell Penney
Director of Church Relations
Tyndale Theological Seminary
& Biblical Institute

The Process At A Glance

In the following five diagrams the entire process of the *Equipping The Saints* discipleship curriculum can be seen at a glance. The process will take you from your initial faith in Christ to a place where you are equipped with the basic understanding you need to go into the world and lead others to Christ and spiritually parent them. The doctrinal understanding received through the process will equip you to live the abundant life that Christ won for us at the cross. It will also enable you in ministry skills. This is important since we are all called into the ministry at salvation (Eph. 4:12). This visual representation of the process will enable you to see where you are going in the process and encourage you to strive to complete all divisions. As you go through the material, be challenged by the commission we have received from our Lord:

"All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age."

The Process Of Making Disciples

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee: there they wil

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they gat large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of tr soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authorit on earth has been givet fore go and make disc tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have comm



Evangelizing
(Baptizing, Mt. 28: 18-20)



The Process Of Making Disciples

MATTHEW 27-28

all his disciples. "Surely," he said, "Greetings," he said. "I am clasped his feet." "Then Jesus said to them, 'Go and tell in Galilee; there they will find you.'"

Guards' Report

While the women were of the guards were reported to the chief priests that had happened. The priests had met with the guards and devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money, and they were to say, 'This happened during the night and while we were asleep.' They went to the governor, and they said, 'Keep you out of this, for we do not want to be troubled. And the soldiers took the money, and they were instructed. And this story circulated among the Jews every day.'

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. Then Jesus said, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age.'

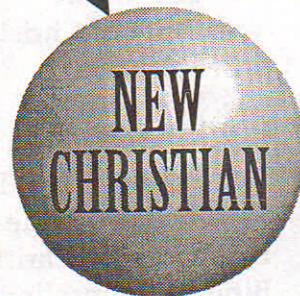


Evangelizing

(Baptizing, Mt. 28: 18-20)

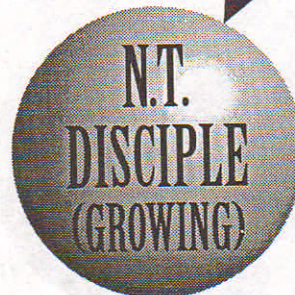
The Basics

- A. Salvation
- B. Assurance
- C. Daily Time with God
- D. Prayer Life
- E. Personal Bible Study
- F. Scripture Memorization
- G. Confession of Sin
- H. Dealing with Temptation
- I. The Spirit-filled Life
- J. Obedience
- K. God's Discipline
- L. Developing Godly Habits
- M. Knowing God's Will
- N. Stewardship
- O. The Church



Establishing (The Basics)

(Teaching, Mt. 28: 18-20)



The Process Of Making Disciples

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Sue them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee: there they wil

The Guards' Report

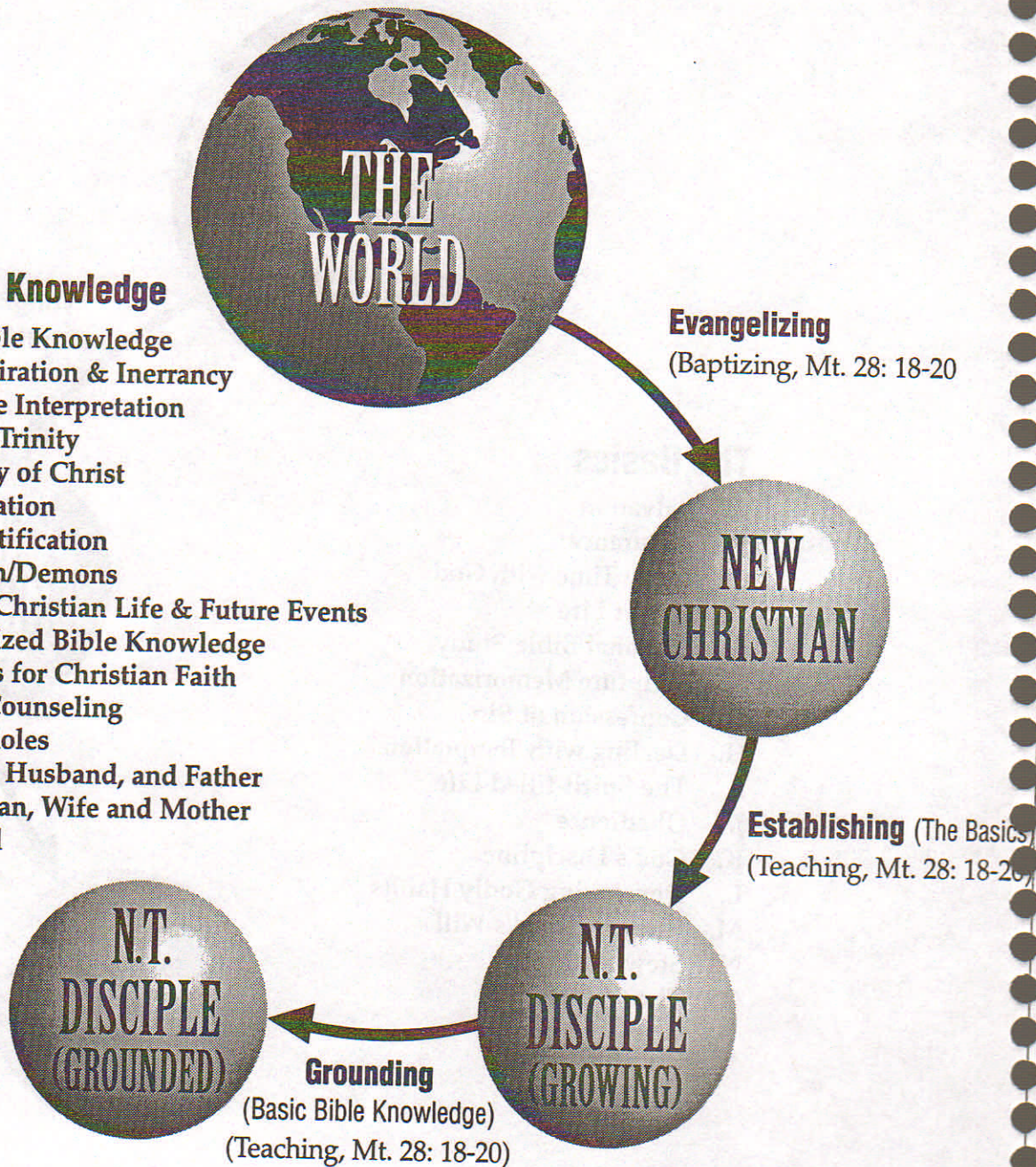
¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wil

devised a p. **A. Basic Bible Knowledge**
 large sum of mo **1. Inspiration & Inerrancy**
 "You are to say, **2. Bible Interpretation**
 during the night **3. The Trinity**
 while we were asle **4. Deity of Christ**
 gets to the governo **5. Salvation**
 and keep you out **6. Sanctification**
 soldiers took the m **7. Satan/Demons**
 were instructed. An **8. The Christian Life & Future Events**

widely circ **B. Systematized Bible Knowledge**
 very day. **C. Evidences for Christian Faith**
D. Biblical Counseling
E. Biblical Roles

1. Man, Husband, and Father
2. Woman, Wife and Mother
3. Child

him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then lesus and said, "All authorin on earth has been givet fore go and make dis tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have comm study I am with you al



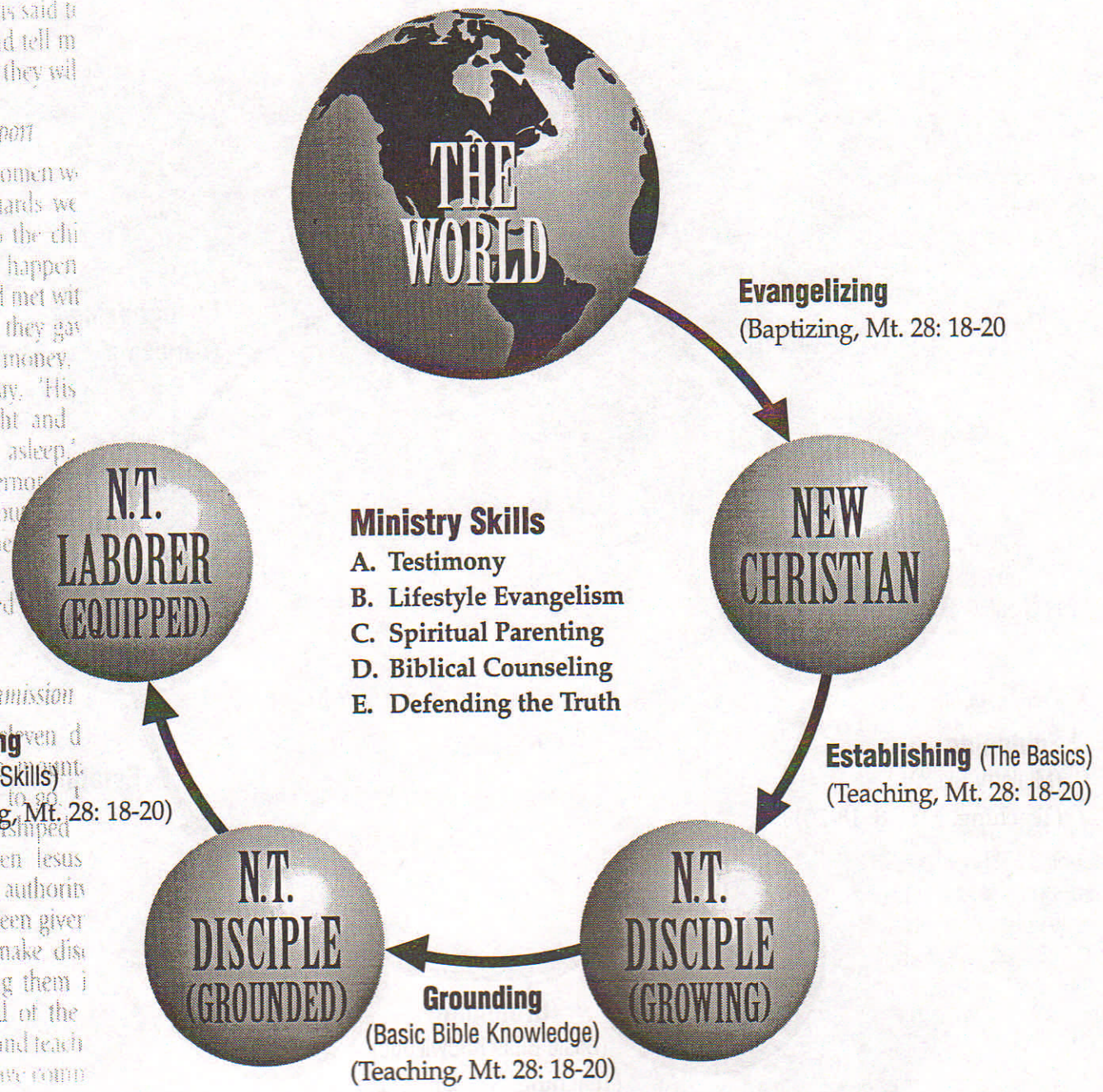
The Process Of Making Disciples

MATTHEW 27-28

his disciples. "Suc
"Greetings," he s
him, clasped his feet
Then Jesus said to
and, Go and tell m
Galilee; there they will

Guards' Report
While the women w
of the guards we
reported to the chi
ng that had happen
priests had met wit
ed a plan, they gav
sum of money,
ate to say, "His
ing the night and
we were asleep."
to the governor
keep you out
liers took the
e instructed.
ely circulated
day.

Great Commission
Equipping
(Ministry Skills)
(Teaching, Mt. 28: 18-20)
They worshiped
bubled. Then Jesus
said, "All authority
earth has been giv
go and make disci
ons, baptizing them i
Father and of the
y Spirit, and teach
saying I have comm
sely I am with you al



The Process Of Making Disciples

MATTHEW 27-28

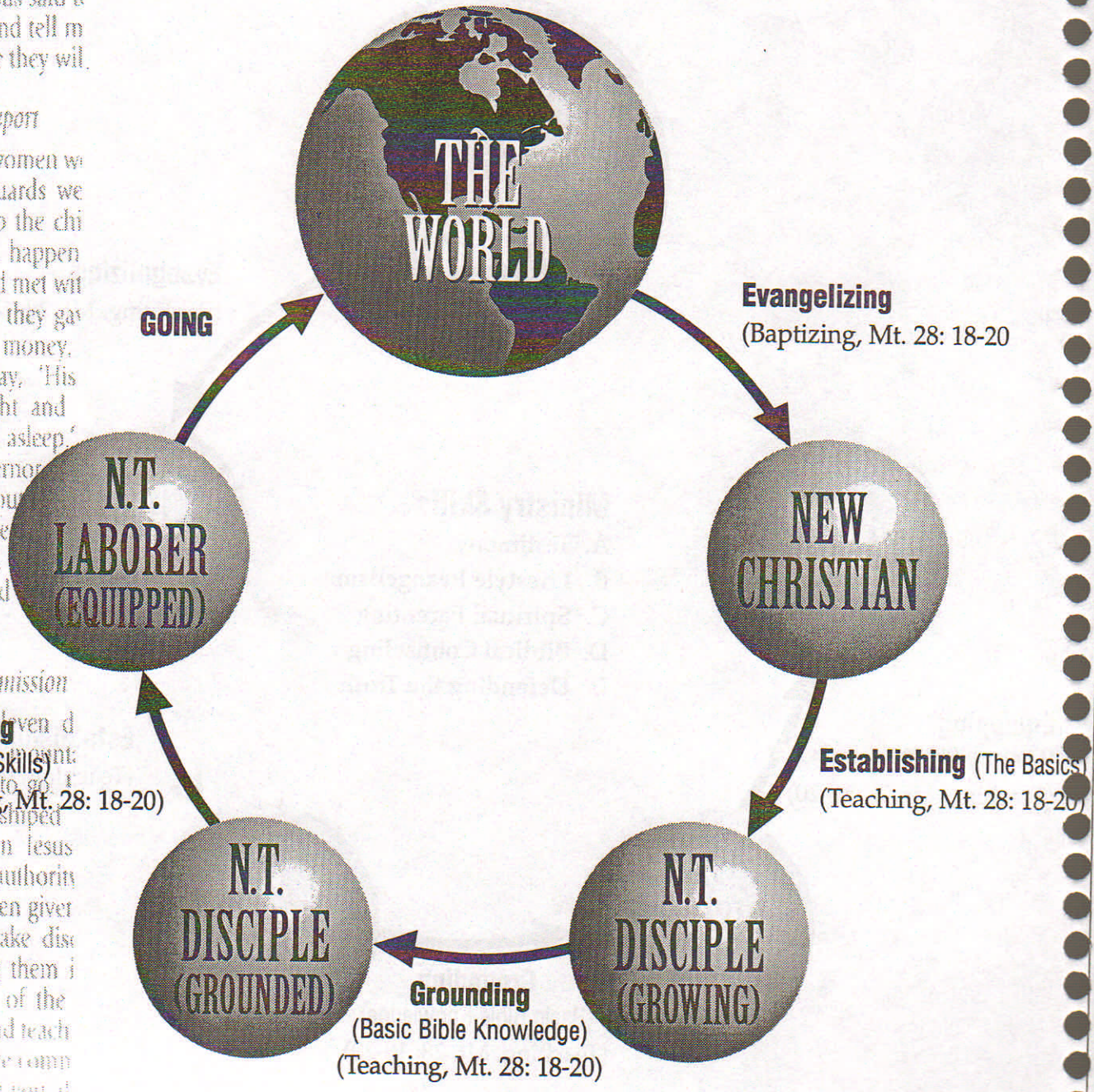
to tell his disciples. "Sud them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee; there they wil.

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan. they gav large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor and keep you our soldiers took the were instructed, widely circulated very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶**Equipping** (Ministry Skills) Galilee. At the mount: had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authorin on earth has been giver fore go and make disc tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have comm study I an with you at





Salvation

MATTHEW 27-

his disciples.
"Greetings."
him, clasped his
Then Jesus s

aid, Go and tell m
What Is

Salvation

All About?

en w
of the guards we
reported to the chi
that had happen
priests had met wit
ed a plan, they ga
sum of money.
are to say, "His
ing the night and
we were asleep."
to the governor, we
keep you out of tr
licers took the money,
e instructed. And thi
y circulated among
day.

Great Commission

Then the eleven d
ace, to the mount
told them to go. ¹
they worshiped
ubited. ¹⁸Then Jesus
said, "All authority
earth has been givet
go and make disci
ns, baptizing them i
Father and of the
A Spirit, ²⁰and teach
ything I have comm
I am with you al



How do I find God? This is a question most everyone asks at one time or another. The answer you get may vary depending on whom you ask. Most people in our day would give you the answer, "There are many ways to God." A person searching for spiritual understanding will encounter many religions (Islam, Hinduism, Buddhism, etc.) and many pseudo-Christian groups (Mormons, Jehovah Witnesses, Christian Scientists, etc.). All these groups claim to be one way or the way to God or may have their distinct way to God. Most, if not all of the groups, promote a way to reach God, but as we will see in our study the Bible's message is that we have no way to reach God, He had to reach down to us. So is there only one way to God? Jesus Christ said of Himself, "*I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but through Me*" (Jn. 14:6). So, let us see what salvation is all about and why Jesus Christ is the only way to the Father.



There Exists A Holy God

The Bible is clear that the God of the universe is holy. _____ means that God is absolutely separate from and exalted above all His creatures, and He is equally separate from all moral _____ and _____.¹

"Who is like Thee among the gods, O LORD? Who is like Thee, majestic in holiness, Awesome in praises, working wonders?" (Ex 15:11).

"For I am the LORD your God. Consecrate yourselves therefore, and be holy; for I am holy..." (Lev. 11:44).

"Thine eyes are too pure to approve evil, And Thou canst not look on wickedness with favor" (Hab 1:13).

"And the four living creatures, each one of them having six wings, are full of eyes around and within; and day and night they do not cease to say, "Holy, holy, holy, is the Lord God, the Almighty, who was and who is and who is to come..." (Rev 4:8).

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," he came to him, clasped his feet and kissed him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers in Galilee; there they will meet you, just as I said to you."

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met and devised a plan. They gave the women a large sum of money, and they said, 'You are to say, "This happened while we were asleep," while we were asleep.' So when the women get to the governor, we will tell him and keep you out of trouble." The soldiers were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. ¹⁷When they saw him, they worshiped, but some doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. ¹⁹Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. ²¹And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age. Amen."

Many, many other verses could be cited but this sampling is enough to show us that one of the attributes of the Eternal God is **holiness**. The above passage from Habbukak (1:3) shows us how God reacts to evil. He cannot _____ it nor look on it with _____ as a result of His **holiness**.

All Mankind Is Sinful

The Bible says that all mankind is **sinful**.

"as it is written, There is _____ righteous, not even one; There is _____ who understands, There is _____ who seeks for God; All have turned aside, together they have become useless; There is _____ who does good, There is not even one. Their throat is an _____, With their tongues they keep deceiving, The poison of asps is under their lips; Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness; Their feet are swift to shed blood, Destruction and misery are in their paths, And the path of peace have they not known. There is _____ before their eyes" (Rom. 3:10-18).

Thus, _____ mankind is _____ and is _____ from God. And not only have we committed **sins** but we are **sinners** by our very nature (Rom. 5:12). "_____ is defined as **missing the mark**: It's an athletic term that indicates whether the javelin struck the target or not. God has a target or standard of morality or rightness for man to live up to. No one does, or ever has, nor ever will."² Understanding that God demands perfect righteousness in order for me to have a relationship with Him, I see that I **am in big trouble**.

"for _____ have sinned and fall short of the glory of God" (Rom 3:23).

Thus, there is a separation between me and God. My sinfulness has created an unbridgeable gulf that cannot be bridged by anything I do. Even my best efforts and good intentions fall short of God's standard of righteousness. Man's religion, philosophy, self-righteousness or anything else that I attempt to use to reach God falls pitifully short.



Why Do Man's Religions, Philosophies, and Self-righteousness Fall Short?

God Is Just (Righteous)

The Bible also tells us that God is **righteous** or **just**. Since God is **just** it means that He _____ of sin. "The **righteousness** or **justice** of God is that aspect of God's holiness which is seen in his treatment of the creature."³

*"Let the nations be glad and sing for joy; For Thou wilt judge the peoples with **uprightness**, And guide the nations on the earth. Selah"* (Ps 67:4).

*"They shall abundantly utter the memory of thy great goodness, and shall sing of thy **righteousness**. The LORD is **righteous** in all his ways, and holy in all his works"* (Ps. 145: 7,17).

*" So the princes of Israel and the king humbled themselves and said, "The LORD is **righteous**"* (2 Chron. 12:6).

*"Therefore, the LORD has kept the calamity in store and brought it on us; for the LORD our God is **righteous** with respect to all His deeds which He has done, but we have not obeyed His voice"* (Dan. 9:14).

*" ...in the future there is laid up for me the crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the **righteous Judge**, will award to me on that day; and not only to me, but also to all who have loved His appearing"* (2 Tim. 4:8).

This is the reason that my best efforts fall pitifully short. Since God is wholly just He cannot overlook sin in the least. And since I have fallen short of God's righteous standard I am under His _____ (Rom. 1:18; Jn. 3:36) and I am in need of God's grace to stand before Him.



God Is Also Gracious

The Bible says God is **gracious**. _____ means _____ favor thus God dispenses unmerited favor to His creatures.

*"... And it shall come about that when he cries out to Me, I will hear him, for I am **gracious**"* (Ex. 22:27).

*"For the LORD your God is **gracious** and compassionate, and will not turn His face away from you if you return to Him"* (2 Chron. 30:9).

"But Thou, O Lord, art a God merciful and gracious, Slow to anger and abundant in lovingkindness and truth" (Ps. 86:15).

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Such greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

"He has made His wonders to be remembered; The LORD is gracious and compassionate" (Ps. 111:4).

"Gracious is the LORD, and righteous; Yes, our God is compassionate" (Ps. 116:5).

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth will be given to you, so that you may go and make disciples of all nations in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to observe all that I have commanded you."

How Can A Holy God Accept A Sinful Man?

Grace Defined

"In the New Testament the Greek word for grace is _____ which means, "_____", or "_____ or _____". The word translated grace in Hebrew from the Old Testament "denotes the stronger coming to the help of the weaker who stands in need of help by reason of his circumstances or natural weaknesses. The action itself is what makes the weaker party acceptable."

Grace At Work

As a result of the _____ of this Gracious God, He provided an answer to my pitiful state. Romans says, "For while we were still _____, at the right time Christ died for the ungodly. For one will hardly die for a righteous man; though perhaps for the good man someone would dare even to die. But God demonstrates His own _____ toward us, in that while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us" (Rom. 5:6-8). As a result of God's love He allowed His Son to come to the earth, take on human flesh, and die on the cross for me. John 3:16 says, "For God so _____ the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have _____."



By allowing His Son to _____ the way was opened for me to have a _____ with a Holy God. Jesus Christ, God's Son became my perfect substitute. Peter says, "and He Himself bore our sins in His body on the cross, that we might die to sin and live to righteousness; for by His wounds you were healed" (1 Peter 2:24). Jesus Christ died on the cross two thousand years ago to become _____ for _____ mankind. Because God is just as we have seen, He could not overlook my sin. His wrath rested on me because God's righteousness demanded He punish my sin.

Jesus Christ's death _____ the righteous demands of God . Christ was Him "*whom God displayed publicly as a propitiation (satisfaction) in His blood through faith. This was to demonstrate His righteousness, because in the forbearance of God He passed over the sins previously committed; for the demonstration, I say, of His righteousness at the present time, that He might be just and the justifier of the one who has faith in Jesus*" (Rom. 3:25-27). Christ's death on the cross proved that God is just by not allowing the sin's of mankind to go unpunished. Now God is _____ when He saves me since Christ paid the penalty for my sin.



I Am Saved Through Faith

"...even the righteousness of God through faith in Jesus Christ for all those who believe; for there is no distinction ..." (Rom. 3:22).

"...And they said, Believe in the Lord Jesus,, and you shall be saved, You and your house" (Acts 16:31).

"But as many as received Him, to them gave He gave the right to become children of God, even to those who believe in his name" (Jn. 1:12).

"He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him" (Jn. 3:36).

"Nevertheless knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law but through faith in Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Christ Jesus, that we might be justified by the faith in Christ ..." (Gal. 2:16).

In Romans 3:28, Paul says that "**a man is justified by _____ apart from the works of the Law**". The Greek word used in the New Testament for faith can be translated "_____" or "_____." ⁵ Thus, to place confidence in Christ and His finished work on the cross for the forgiveness of my sins is "**saving faith.**" **In other words, saving faith is for me to so completely put my hope in Christ's finished work on the cross alone as sufficient to pay for my sins, that if it is not sufficient I have no hope.**

Paul's answer to the Philippian jailer answers our above question, "How must I be saved?". Paul answered, "*Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ, and you shall be saved, you and your household*" (Acts 16:31). Salvation comes when I:

1. Understand and admit my spiritual need.
2. ***Believe** on the Lord Jesus Christ of the Bible and accept the fact He died on the cross to pay for my sins.

3. Receive Him as my Savior.

The Bible assures me that if I receive Christ as my Savior I have

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Such greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. They gave large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. From him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given before go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "and teach everything I have commanded you to do."

"Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life (Jn. 5:24).

Perhaps you have never taken these steps to turn from your sin and receive Christ as your Savior. If you would like to at this time, here is a simple prayer to help you communicate your desire. There is nothing magical in these words and a prayer alone cannot save you. The prayer should be communicating the decision you have already made in your heart.

Dear Lord Jesus:

I know I am a sinner. I believe you died for my sins. Right now, I admit that I am a sinner and realize my guilt before you. I open the door of my heart and life. I receive you as my personal Savior. Thank you for saving me now. Amen



Summary

As we have seen, the Bible teaches that the God of all creation is a Holy God (Ex 15:11, Lev 11:44, Hab 1:13, Rev 4:8) and I am sinful (Rm 3:10-18, 23; 5:12). Because God is also just (righteous) (Ps 67:4, 145:7,17; 2 Ch 12:6; Dn 9:14; 2 Tim 4:8), He cannot allow my sin to go unpunished. No amount of self-righteousness or manmade religion or philosophy can reconcile me back to a Holy God. But, God is gracious (Ex 22:27; 2 Ch 30:9; Ps 86:15, 111:4, 116:5) and in His love He provided the solution to the problem of my separation from Him. God sent His son to die on the cross to pay for my sin (Jn 3:16; Rm 5:6-8; I Peter 2:24). Christ's substitutionary sacrifice satisfied the righteous demands of God and opened the way for a Holy God to save me, a sinner (Rm 3:25-27). Now I can receive Christ as my Savior by simple faith (Acts 16:31; Jn 1:12, 3:36; Rm 3:22; Ga 2:16). As a result, I am given the gift of eternal life (Jn 5:24).



Test Your Knowledge

1. _____ means that God is absolutely separate from and exalted above all his creatures, and He is equally separate from all moral _____ and _____.
2. Since God is Holy He cannot _____ evil or look on it with _____.
3. "There is _____ righteous, not even one; There is _____ who understands, There is _____ who seeks for God" (Rom. 3:10-11a).
4. _____ mankind is _____ and is _____ from God.
5. Since God is just it means that He _____ of sin.
6. Grace means _____ thus God dispenses unmerited favor to His creatures.
7. Jesus Christ died on the cross two thousand years ago to become _____ for _____ mankind.
8. Jesus Christ's death _____ the righteous demands of God.
9. The Greek word for faith can be translated " _____ " or " _____."
10. In Romans 3:28 Paul says that "a man is justified by _____ apart from the works of the Law."
11. The Bible assures us that those who receive Christ as their Savior have _____.

Additional Reading

Lightener, Robert P. *Sin the Savior and Salvation*. Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1991.

Couch, Malcolm O. *What Christianity Is All About*. Ft. Worth: Tyndale Theological Seminary, 1991.

Endnotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All **Quotes** on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everywhere. I have come

*Repentance is many times included as being a separate condition of salvation in addition to believing. The word repentance means a change of mind. There is no doubt that repentance is necessary for salvation as evidenced by the many references to it in biblical sermons, but Scripture views repentance as included in believing. All who believe in Christ have changed their mind about Him and their sin. In repentance the sinner turns from himself and his sin. In faith the sinner turns to the Savior for salvation. Repentance and faith are two sides of the same coin.

¹ Henry C. Thiessen. *Lectures in Systematic Theology* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1979) p.84.

² Malcom O. Couch. *What Christianity Is All About* (Ft. Worth: Tyndale Theological Seminary, 1991) p. 3.

³ Henry C. Thiessen. *Lectures In Systematic Theology* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1979) p. 85.

⁴ Colin Brown. ed. *The New International Dictionary of New Testament Theology*, 4 vols. (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1986) p.116.

⁵ Walter Bauer and W. F. Arndt, F. W. Gingrich, F. W. Danker. *A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament And Other Early Christian Literature* 2 ed. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979) p. 662.



"Salvation"

"Holiness is an essential attribute of God; it is his nature and essence; he is holiness itself."¹

JOHN GILL

"The holy character of God is the final and only standard by which moral values may be accurately judged."²

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

Quotes

"In Adam's case a personal sin caused the sin nature; in the case of all other human beings save One- the sin nature causes personal sin."³

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

"When we regard God as the author of our moral nature, we conceive of Him as holy; when we regard Him in His dealings with His rational creatures, we conceive of Him as righteous. He is a righteous ruler; all of His laws are holy, just and good."⁴

CHARLES HODGE

"Grace is freely given to the most undeserving and unworthy and is not obtained by any strenuous efforts, endeavors, or works, either small or great, not even by the efforts of the best and most honorable men who have sought and followed righteousness with a burning zeal."⁵

MARTIN LUTHER

"The grace of God may be considered as displayed in acts of goodness towards his creatures, especially men; and is no other than his free favor and good will to men; it is no other than love unmerited and undeserved, exercising and communicating itself to them in a free and generous manner; which they are altogether unworthy of."⁶

A. A. HODGE

"The death of Christ is represented on His part as an act of obedience to the law which sinners have broken, which act constitutes a propitiation or satisfaction of all God's righteous demands upon the sinner."⁷

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

"Grace is freely given to the most undeserving and unworthy and is not obtained by any strenuous efforts, endeavors, or works, either small or great, not even by the efforts of the best and most honorable men who have sought and followed righteousness with a burning zeal."⁸

MARTIN LUTHER

"Now faith is the assurance of things hoped for, the conviction of things not seen."⁹

GOD (HEB. 11:1)

"Those whom He has predestined to be conformed to the image of his Son, them He calls to the exercise of faith and repentance; and whom he thus calls He justifies, He provides for them and imputes to them righteousness which satisfies the demands of the law, and which entitles them in Christ and for His sake to eternal life; and those whom He justifies He glorifies. There is no flaw in the chain."¹⁰

CHARLES HODGE

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded you to do at

¹ John Gill. *Complete Body of Doctrinal and Practical Divinity Vol. I* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1978) p.149.

² L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. II* (Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1948) p. 227.

³ Ibid., p. 283.

⁴ Charles Hodge. *Systematic Theology Vol. II* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1977) p. 416.

⁵ Ewald M. Plass. *What Luther Says Vol. III* (St. Louis: Concordia Publishing House, 1959) p. 604.

⁶ A. A. Hodge. *Outlines of Theology* (Carlisle: Banner of Truth, 1991) p. 117.

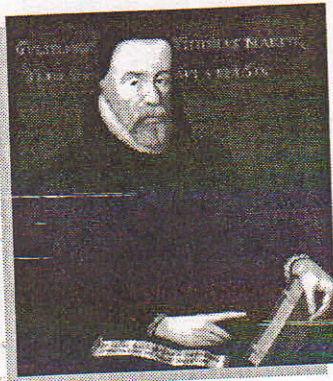
⁷ L. S. Chafer. *Major Bible Themes* rev. John F. Walvoord (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1974) p. 62.

⁸ Plass, Ibid., p. 604.

⁹ Hebrews 11:1 NASB (*New American Standard Bible*).

¹⁰ Hodge, Ibid., Vol. III. p. 111.





Assurance

I was twelve years old when I walked to the front of the church after a stirring revival meeting service in our small country church. The preacher said that I was a sinner and that Jesus Christ had died on the cross for me and paid for my sins. He said that God loved me and that He wanted to give me eternal life if only I would trust Christ as my Savior. With incredible emotion I walked to the front of that church to receive Christ. The preacher explained the way of salvation to me one more time and then I prayed to God revealing my heart's desire to be saved. That night I "felt" saved. But in the following days I would sometimes doubt the experience and wonder if I was saved at all. Since then I have talked with many Christians who have had similar experiences. The bottom line is that it is natural to feel doubt at times about our salvation. God knew this would happen to His children, thus He made sure there are ways that we can be assured that we are saved. The Apostle John writes, "These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, in order that you may know that you have eternal life" (1 Jn. 5:13). This is very important, since a lack of assurance can neutralize our peace and joy and our witness as Christians.

As children of God we can _____ that we have eternal life in three ways:

- The Witness of the _____
- The Witness of the _____
- The Witness of a _____



I Am Given Eternal Life

"And the witness is this, that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He who has the Son has the life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have the life. These things I have written to you who

believe in the name of the Son of God, in order that you _____ that you have _____" (1 Jn. 5:11-13).

The Bible is filled with verses attesting to the fact that when I have put my faith in Jesus Christ I have eternal life. When I come to Christ I need to realize that my salvation is not based on feeling or emotion but on fact, that fact of what God has done



in response to my simple faith. Observe what the Word of God says about you after your act of faith.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely they will kill your bodies, but they cannot harm your souls. Whoever desires to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for My sake and the Gospel will save it. For the Son of Man will be betrayed and killed, but after three days He will rise again. Remember, therefore, that you are not to be afraid of those who kill the body but cannot harm the soul, but rather be afraid of the One who can destroy both soul and body in hell. He who has ears to hear, let him hear." Then Jesus said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature. He who believes and is baptized will be saved, but he who does not believe will be condemned." Then the disciples worshiped Him and said, "Blessed is the name of the Lord God of Israel forevermore, for in Him is the kingdom of power and glory forever and ever. Amen." Then Jesus came to Galilee, there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. Him, they worshiped doubted. Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. Amen." Then

"Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, _____, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life (Jn. 5:24).

"He who believes in the Son has eternal life; but he who does not obey the Son shall not see life, but the wrath of God abides on him" (Jn. 3:36).

"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish, but have eternal life" (Jn. 3:16).

Many wonderful things happen when I put my faith in Jesus Christ that _____ me of my salvation. We will discuss a few of them now. Others will be discussed in more depth later in our study when we get to the Basic Bible Knowledge division of our discipleship program.) At the point of my trust in Christ, God: (1) _____ me of my sins and (2) He _____ me with the _____ of Christ.

God Has Forgiveness My Sins

The Bible states that when I put my faith in Jesus Christ my sins are forgiven.

"Of Him [Jesus] all the prophets bear witness that through His name everyone who believes in Him receives forgiveness of sins" (Acts 10:43).

"For He delivered us from the domain of darkness, and transferred us to the kingdom of His beloved Son, in whom we have redemption, the forgiveness of sins" (Col. 1:13-14).

"And when you were dead in your transgressions and the uncircumcision of your flesh, He made you alive together with Him, having forgiven us all our transgressions" (Col. 2:13).

"In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of our trespasses, according to the riches of His grace" (Eph. 1:7).

According to God's Word He has forgiven me _____ my sins and transgressions past, present, and future through Christ (Col 2:13). Because of this I can be sure of God's acceptance of me. I can be assured of my salvation.

God Gives Me Christ's Righteousness

The Bible says that God gives (reckons or credits) to me the righteousness of Christ through my simple faith in His Son.

"Then he believed in the LORD; and He _____ it to him as righteousness" (Gen. 15:6).

"For what does the Scripture say? 'AND ABRAHAM BELIEVED GOD, AND IT WAS RECKONED TO HIM AS RIGHTEOUSNESS'" (Rom. 4:3).

"... that he[speaking of Abraham] might be the father of all who believe without being circumcised, that righteousness might be reckoned to them" (Rom.4:11).

" He [God the Father] made Him [Christ] who knew no sin to be sin [a sin offering] on our behalf, that _____ might become the _____ in Him" (2 Cor. 5:21).

As a result of my faith God reckons or imputes righteousness to me, the righteousness of Christ. The Greek word translated "reckon" in our English Bibles was an _____ term in the first century when the New Testament was written. It means to "enter into the _____" or "to _____ on one's account." When I put my trust in Christ, God the Father places on my account the righteousness of Christ. This is what gives me my righteous standing before a Holy God. This process of reckoning Christ's righteousness to my account assures me I am saved.

Conclusion

The Bible clearly states that when I believe in Jesus Christ and put my faith in His finished work on the cross as payment for my sins I am given eternal life and I have all my sins forgiven. In addition, God the Father places on me the righteousness of Christ which gives me a righteous standing before Him. For these reasons I can be assured of my salvation.



The Witness

of The Holy Spirit

to tell them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everything I have said

The Bible states in Romans 8:16 "*The Spirit Himself _____ with our spirit that we are _____ of God.*" At the point of salvation the Holy Spirit is said to come into my heart and live within me until I am with God in heaven (Eph 4:30).

"...and hope does not disappoint, because the love of God has been poured out within our hearts through the Holy Spirit who was given to us" (Rom. 5:5).

"However, you are not in the flesh but in the Spirit, if indeed the Spirit of God dwells in you. But if anyone does not have the Spirit of Christ, he does not belong to Him..... But if the Spirit of Him who raised Jesus from the dead dwells in you, He who raised Christ Jesus from the dead will also give life to your mortal bodies through His Spirit who indwells you" (Rom. 8:9-11).

"Or do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and that you are not your own?" (1 Cor. 6:19).

"Now He who prepared us for this very purpose is God, who gave to us the Spirit as a pledge" (2 Cor. 5:5).

WHO IS THE HOLY SPIRIT? The Holy Spirit is a person. He is one of the persons of the Godhead. Later in our study we will study the doctrine of the Holy Trinity. Until then, let us simply state that the Bible declares that God exists in three personalities - Father, Son and Holy Spirit. As we have seen, the Holy Spirit is given to us at salvation and "bears witness" to our position in God's family.

WHAT DOES "BEAR WITNESS" MEAN? "There is a legitimate place for feelings in the assurance of a new Christian. This lies in experiencing the inner witness of the Spirit of God as to his Sonship. This inner witness is the sense of _____, and _____ experienced in the life of the true believer. It is the sense of right standing that adds firmness to a person's commitment. It is more an inner feeling than an external emotion."¹ As Christians this "inner feeling" is more consistent as we study God's word and let it transform our thinking. Thus, we are more able to fend off the lies of Satan with the truth of God's Word. As we mature in Christ the peace of the Holy Spirit grows.



He Teaches & Guides Me

"But the Helper, the Holy Spirit, whom the Father will send in My name, He will teach you all things, and bring to your remembrance all that I said to you..." (Jn. 14:26).

Now that we have been indwelt by the Holy Spirit He acts as our teacher to help us to understand the Scriptures of which He Himself originated by leading the Apostles and Prophets to record what we know now as the Bible.

"... but just as it is written, "Things which eye has not seen and ear has not heard, And which have not entered the heart of man, All that God has prepared for those who love Him." ¹⁰ For to us God revealed them through the Spirit; for the Spirit searches all things, even the depths of God. ¹¹ For who among men knows the thoughts of a man except the spirit of the man, which is in him? Even so the thoughts of God no one knows except the Spirit of God. ¹² Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things freely given to us by God, ¹³ which things we also speak, not in words taught by human wisdom, but in those taught by the Spirit, combining spiritual thoughts with spiritual words." (1 Cor. 2:9-13)

"The position within the heart of the believer which the Holy Spirit now occupies secures the closest relationship, so that He, the Spirit Himself, is thus able to create impressions within the Christian's consciousness which seem to have occurred only to his own finite mind."²

"For all who are being _____ by the Spirit of God, these are sons of God" (Rom. 8:14).

"But if you are led by the Spirit, you are not under the Law.... If we live by the Spirit, let us also walk by the Spirit" (Gal. 5:18,25).

"But when He, the Spirit of truth, comes, He will guide you into all the truth" (Jn. 16:13).

The Holy Spirit is my _____ in living the Christian life. "The Spirit of God takes the believer by the hand, as it were, and leads him step by step into the truths of Scripture."³ The Holy Spirit guides me by _____ me of what He has taught me and helping me in _____ it to my life.

He Is My Comforter or Helper

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely I am with you all the way, even to the end of the age." Then he said to them, "Greetings," and he kissed their feet. Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me, just as I said to you."

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to buy spices, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan, they gave them a large sum of money, and they said, 'You are to say, "This during the night and while we were asleep, we got to the governor, we and keep you out of it, and soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.'

The Great Commission

16 Then Jesus said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature. He who believes and is baptized will be saved; but he who does not believe will be condemned." 17 And he commanded them to go into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature. 18 And he said to them, "All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. Therefore, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you. And I will be with you and go with you to the end of the age."

The Witness of A Transformed Life

"And I will ask the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that He may be with you forever; that is the Spirit of truth, whom the world cannot receive, because it does not behold Him or know Him, but you know Him because He abides with you, and will be in you" (Jn. 14:16-17).

In John 14:16, Christ revealed to the disciples that after His ascension He would send to them another helper (NASB) or comforter (KJV) like Himself. The Greek word used here literally means "to come along side." Just as Christ had been a comfort and a help, the Holy Spirit now does the same for me.

He Is My Intercessor

"And in the same way the Spirit also helps our weakness; for we do not know how to pray as we should, but the Spirit Himself intercedes for us with groanings too deep for words; and He who searches the hearts knows what the mind of the Spirit is, because He intercedes for the saints according to the will of God" (Rom. 8:26-28).

The Holy Spirit _____ intercedes for us since we do not know how to pray the perfect will of God for our lives. Noah Webster defines intercession as "prayer to one party in favor of another."⁴ Thus an intercessor is a go-between, or one who speaks on behalf of another. The Spirit knows His own mind, He knows our hearts, and He knows the will of God. He is the perfect intercessor.



The third witness to assure us of our salvation is the witness of a transformed life. When the Spirit of God comes into our lives He creates in us a _____ a new man. The Bible says in Paul's second letter to the church in Corinth, "Therefore if any man is in Christ, he is a new creature; the old things passed away; behold, new things have come." (2 Cor. 5:17) and in his letter to the Colossians he says, "...put on the new self who is being renewed to a true knowledge according to the image of the One who created him" (Col. 2:10). As this verse indicates, this "renewal" has the end result of making us more like our Savior (Rm 8:29). Our _____ and _____ begin to slowly but surely become more like Christ. This will result in:

A New Attitude Toward Sin

Since I am no longer a slave to my old sinful ways (Rm 6:6-7, 18, 22), I now have the _____ to live a life of righteousness. As I yield my life to God I can gain victory over sin (Rm 6:22). Because of the convicting

work of the Holy Spirit in my life I no longer can feel comfortable with sin. Paul shows this very clearly in his own experience. In Romans 7:19-20 he states, "For the good that I wish, I do not do; but I practice the very evil that I do not wish. But if I am doing the very thing I do not wish, I am no longer the one doing it, but sin which dwells in me." If I do commit "that which we do not wish" (sin) the Holy Spirit is there to convict me until I confess it before the Father and my peace and joy returns (I Jn 1:9).

Our Actions and Our Character Will Change

In Galatians chapter five Paul discusses the battle that goes on between the old sinful nature and the new nature given to us by God. He says that these two are in opposition (Gal. 5:17). He then points out the key to the successful Christian life, that is, being led by the Spirit. As I learn to yield my will to God, He produces in me what Paul calls the "fruit of the Spirit." (Gal. 5:22). As I grow as a Christian I produce more this fruit of a transformed life. Paul states, "But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, self-control..." (Gal. 5:22-23b). People around me will see changes in my life and I will feel a peace and joy I have never known. Everyone's growth rate is different so we shouldn't compare our growth to Christians around us. Just as _____ children grow at different rates so do _____ children, but change will come. This is another assurance of my new spiritual life.



Summary

God never meant for me to constantly wonder whether I have eternal life (I Jn. 5:11-13). At the same time, it is natural for me to doubt my salvation at times and sometimes to "feel" unsaved. It is for this reason God assures me in at least three ways that I am His child. They are: the witness of the Bible (Jn. 5:24, 3:36, 3:16), the witness of the Holy Spirit (Rm. 8:16), and the witness of a transformed life (2 Cor. 5:17; Rm. 8:14). At the point of my trust in Christ, God: (1) forgives me of my sins (Acts 10:43; Col. 1:13-14, 2:14; Ep. 1:7) and (2) credits me with the righteousness of Christ (Gn. 15:6; Rm. 4:3, 11; 2 Cor. 5:21). The Holy Spirit "bears witness" of my place in God's family through teaching and guiding me (Jn. 14:26, 16:13; Rm. 8:14), comforting and helping me (Jn. 14:16-17) and perfectly interceding for me before the Father (Rm. 8:26-28). God also creates in me a new nature and a desire to live a life of righteousness which results in: (1) a new attitude toward sin (Rm. 6:6-7, 18, 22; 6:22; 7:19-20) and (2) my actions and character becoming more like Christ's (Ga. 5:22-23b; Rm. 8:29). All of this affirms that I am a child of God and have eternal life.

Test Your Knowledge

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely I am with you all the way, even to the end of the age." Then he said to them, "Greetings." He went to him, clasped his feet, and kissed him. Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me, just as I said to you."

The Guards' Report

While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards were with them. They reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met with the soldiers and had devised a plan. They gave the soldiers a large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This happened during the night and while we were asleep.' If the governor asks you, we will give you a sum of money and keep you out of trouble." The soldiers agreed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews ever since that day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. There they worshiped him, but they doubted. Then Jesus said to them, "All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age."

- As children of God we can know that we have eternal life in three ways: (1) the witness of the _____, (2) the witness of the _____, and (3) the witness of a _____.
- "And the witness is this, that God has given us eternal life, and this life is in His Son. He who has the Son has the life; he who does not have the Son of God does not have the life. These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, in order that you that you have _____" (I Jn. 5:11-13.)
- "Truly, truly, I say to you, he who hears My word, and believes Him who sent Me, _____, and does not come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life" (Jn. 5:24).
- At the point of my trust in Christ, God: (1) _____ me of my sins and (2) _____ me with the _____ of Christ.
- According to God's Word, He has forgiven me _____ my sins and transgressions- past, present, and _____ - through Christ (Col. 2:13).
- "Then he believed in the LORD; and He _____ it to him as righteousness" (Gen. 15:6).
- "He [God the Father] made Him [Christ] who knew no sin to be sin [a sin offering] on our behalf, that _____ might become the _____ in Him" (2 Cor. 5:21).
- The Greek word translated "reckon" in our English Bibles was an _____ term in the first century when the New Testament was written. It means to "enter into the _____" or "to _____ on one's account."
- The Bible states in Romans 8:16, "The Spirit Himself _____ with our spirit that we are _____ of God".
- This inner witness is the sense of _____, _____, and _____ experienced in the life of the true believer.
- The Holy Spirit is my _____ in living the Christian life.
- When the Spirit of God comes into our lives He creates in us a _____, a new man.
- The Holy Spirit guides me by _____ me of what He has taught me and helping me in _____ it to my life.

14. Our _____, _____ and _____ begin to slowly but surely become more like Christ.

15. Just as _____ children grow at different rates so do _____ children, but change will come.

Suggested Reading

Ironside, H. A. *Full Assurance*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1937.

Chafer, L. S. *Major Bible Themes* rev. by John F. Walvoord. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1974 pp. 212-18.

Endnotes

- ¹ Gary W. Kuhne. *The Dynamics of Personal Follow-up* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1976) p.151.
- ² L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology*, Vol. 6 (Dallas: Dallas Seminary, 1948) p. 37.
- ³ Moody Correspondence School Staff. *First Steps in the Christian Faith* (Chicago: The Moody Bible Institute of Chicago, 1957) p.15.
- ⁴ Noah Webster. *American Dictionary Of The English Language* (San Francisco: Foundation For American Christian Education, 1989) p. 112.



“Assurance”

“They whom God hath accepted in His Beloved, and effectually called and sanctified by His Spirit, can neither totally nor finally fall away from the state of grace; but shall certainly persevere therein to the end, and be eternally saved.”¹

WESTMINSTER ASSEMBLY
CONFESSION OF FAITH

“God’s forgiveness of sin refers therefore to His act of putting sin away on a judicial basis, to His remitting the guilt and penalty.”²

KENNETH S. WUEST

Quotes

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely they were with him, clasped his feet, and they were with him. Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brethren that they should go into Galilee, there they will see me, as I said to them.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests that had happened. They had met and devised a plan. They gave a large sum of money to the soldiers to say, 'This night and while we were asleep, we got to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble. The soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the people every day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had told them to go. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. Then Jesus said, 'All authority on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age.'"

"The sinner has no righteousness of his own. God, therefore, imputes to him a righteousness which is not his own. The righteousness thus imputed is declared to be the righteousness of God, of Christ, the righteousness which is by faith. This is also in so many words the declaration of the Bible on the subject."³

CHARLES HODGE

"The Holy Spirit is given at salvation. This is the positive statement of which the negative is that the unbeliever does not possess the Spirit. Ephesians 1:13 indicates the Holy Spirit is given at the moment of salvation. The sealing (and indwelling) with the Spirit took place at the time of believing. Galatians 3:2 also emphasizes this truth."⁴

PAUL ENNS

"The early trinitarian controversies led to the conclusion that the Holy Spirit, as well as the Son, is of the same essence as the Father...."⁵

LOUIS BERKHOF

"The work of the Holy Spirit in teaching is characteristic. The word of God is written by inspiration of the Holy Spirit, and its divine author, the Spirit of truth, is its best teacher."⁶

JOHN F. WALVOORD

"An important point in this aspect of the truth is that guidance is given especially to those who are already walking in the will of God. According to Romans 12:1-2, surrender to God is necessary, 'that ye may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God'."⁷

JOHN F. WALVOORD

"Our English word comfort comes from two Latin words meaning "with strength." We usually think of "comfort" as soothing someone, consoling him or her; and to some extent this is true. But true comfort strengthens us to face life bravely and keep on going. It does not rob us of responsibility or make it easy for us to give up."⁸

WARREN WIERSBE

"There is no explanation of the nature of this ministry, nor is it related to the intercession of Christ. The context of the passage, however, indicates that it is a ministry undertaken in view of our own inability to pray as we ought to pray."⁹

JOHN F. WALVOORD

Quotes

"Because of regeneration, a believer has a new nature or capacity for loving spiritual truths."¹⁰

JOHN A. WITMER

MATTHEW 27-28

"The transformation of the regenerate man to the moral image of God and Christ is not an instantaneous, once-for-all event. It is a gradual step by step process throughout the life of the believer."¹¹

RENALD E. SHOWERS

The Guards' Report

Quotes

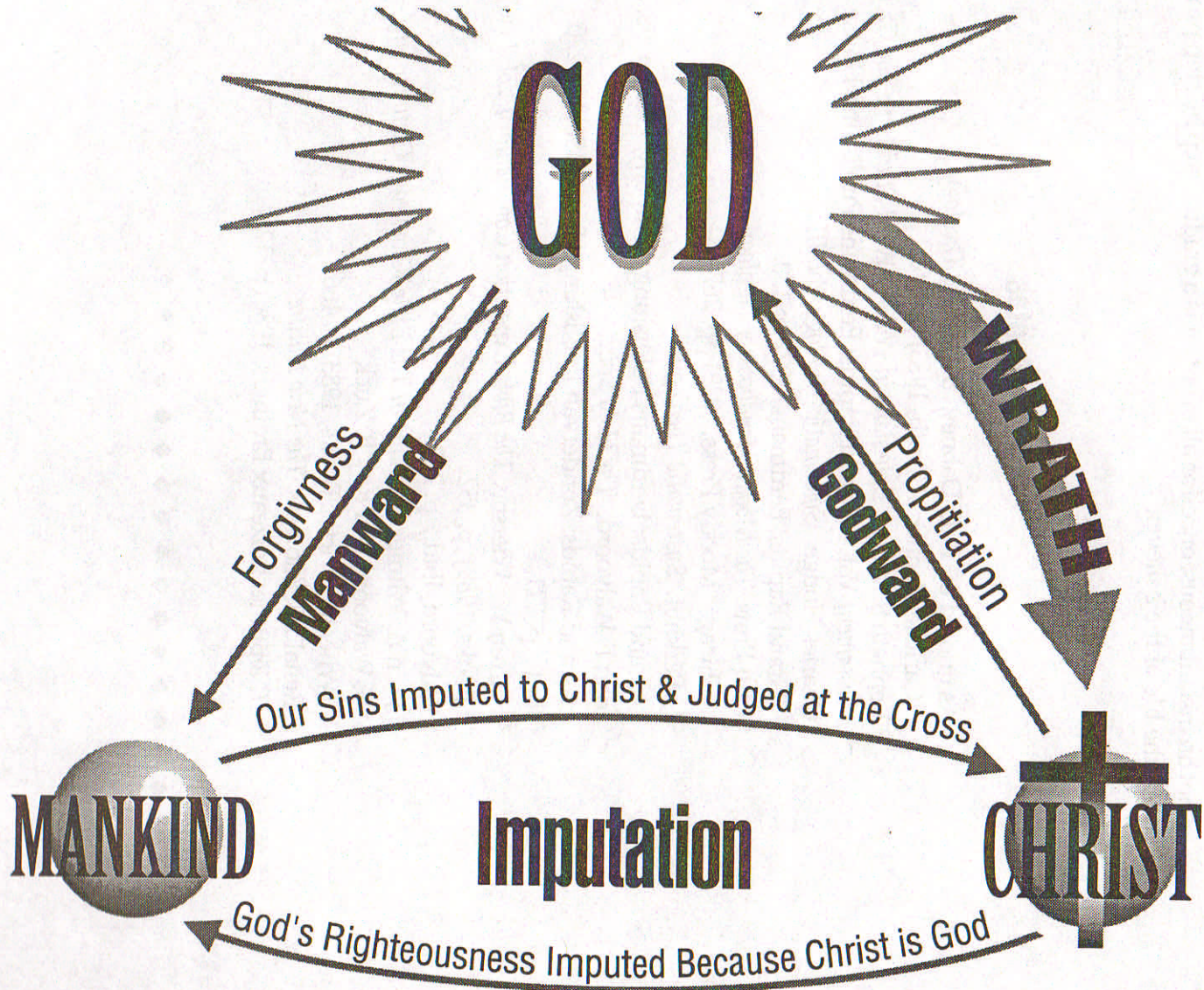
- ¹ As quoted by R. L. Dabney. *Systematic Theology* (Carlisle: Banner of Truth, 1985) p. 689.
- ² Kenneth S. Wuest. *Ephesians in Wuest's Word Studies in The Greek New Testament Vol. I* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing House, 1973) p. 41.
- ³ Charles Hodge. *Systematic Theology Vol. III* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1977) p.150.
- ⁴ Paul Enns. *The Moody Handbook of Theology* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1989) pp. 267-68.
- ⁵ L. Berkhof. *Systematic Theology* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1962) p. 96.
- ⁶ John F. Walvoord. *The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1965) p. 220.
- ⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 221.
- ⁸ Warren W. Wiersbe. *The Bible Exposition Commentary Vol. I* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1989) p. 352.
- ⁹ Walvoord, *Ibid.*, p. 223.
- ¹⁰ John A. Witmer. *Romans in The Bible Knowledge Commentary - NT* eds. John F. Walvoord and Roy B. Zuck (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1983) p. 466.
- ¹¹ Renald E. Showers. *The New Nature* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, 1986) p. 126.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven departed Galilee, to the mountain which he told them to go. ¹⁷And when they worshipped, they worshiped and doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to obey all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age."



Salvation Illustrated



Daily Time With God



MATTHEW 27-

tell his disciples.
om. "Greetings."
him, clasped his
him. Then Jesus

Can I Actually Spend Time With The Creator Of The Universe?

Why Should I Meet With God?

The Great Commission

Then the eleven d
Galilee, to the mount.
had told them to go
him, they worshiped
doubted. Then Jesus
and said, "All authority
on earth has been given
fore go and make disci
ples, baptizing them in
the Father and of the
Holy Spirit, and teach
everything I have comm
anded you to do."

After many years of being a Christian the thought hit me one day that I actually had the incredible opportunity to spend one-on-one time with the most important dignitary of the entire universe - God. Unfortunately I had wasted many years by not enjoying this privilege. I realized I could receive the wisdom of the Creator, of all things, enjoy His love, interact with Him, and draw on His incredible power to live a life of righteousness and purity. That is the privilege that we have and believe me, I now take advantage of it daily. In the physical realm, the only way to really get to know someone is to spend time with them, the same is true in our relationship with God.



When our parents brought us home from the hospital there was a very important substance that we had to receive to grow up to be _____ healthy. If our parents did not realize this beforehand, it became apparent very soon that we needed _____. If they did not remember to feed us we let them know by crying at the tops of our lungs. The same substance is needed for us to grow _____. Peter encourages us, "*...like newborn babes, _____ for the pure milk of the _____, that by it you may _____ in respect to _____*" (1 Pet. 2:2). To grow to maturity as a Christian we must _____ with God studying His Word. The Psalmist realized the importance of time with God and His word as we see in Psalm 119. In verses 147-148 he states, "*I rise before dawn and cry for help; I wait for Thy _____. My eyes anticipate the night watches, That I may _____ on Thy word.*" In Psalm 1 the writer states the following about the "blessed man," "*But his delight is in the law of the Lord, And in His law he meditates _____ and _____*" (Ps. 1:2).

Another need for us as Christians is to _____ with God. God is the perfect example of a loving, caring father. He loves His children very much. He not only revealed that through the act of sending His Son to die on the cross for us, but He displays that love everyday in giving us _____ to live by and always providing a _____ to cry on and a _____ to listen. Some of the most intimate passages of Scripture throughout the Old and New Testament are prayers. Prayer is simply _____ with our Heavenly Father.



When Can I Meet With God?

to tell them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met wit devised a plan. they ga large sum of money. "You ate to say. His during the night and while we were asleep. gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go f him, they worshiped doubted. Then Jesus and said, "All authorit on earth has been givet fore baptizing them i the Holy Spirit, and of the Holy Spirit, and teach everything I have comm

The Daily Quiet Time

The question of "When can I meet with God?" is an important one. One exciting thing about the God that we serve is that He is omnipresent (Ps. 139:7-10,17-18; Acts 17:24, 27-28). _____ means that God is everywhere at the same time. This is an incredible truth to grasp and it shows a little of the nature of our awesome God. Since God is omnipresent it means He is _____ with us, thus we can meet with God _____ we want and _____ we are. In Paul's first letter to the believers in Thessalonica he told them to "pray without ceasing" (1 Thess. 5:17). This means that we should continually be praying as things arise. We can be spontaneous in our prayer life. During our waking hours whether at work, school, home, vacation, etc. we can communicate with God through prayer. _____ prayer is a excellent habit to develop in our daily walk.

A Specific Time And Place

Even though we can converse with God at any time during the day, it is also valuable for us to have a _____ time each day to meet with God (a quiet time). Some of us are "morning people" and some are "night people" so everyone's quiet time with God will not be at the same time. We see that even Christ gave us an example of maintaining a quiet time. Mark tells us, "And in the early morning, while it was still dark, He arose and went out and departed to a _____ and was praying there" (Mk. 1:35). Our quiet time should be a time when we are rested and alert so that we can concentrate on what we study and on our prayer before God. The key for most of us is that the time and the place be as _____ as possible. The place where we meet with God should be a quiet place where we can concentrate on what we have read from God's Word and meditate on the implications to our lives and the lives of our families. We will also appreciate the quiet place as we unreservedly pour out our hearts to our Father in adoration, praise and thanksgiving, confession, intercession and petition.

There are three key elements to a fruitful, life transforming quiet time, they are: (1) _____ life, (2) personal _____ study and (3) _____ memorization.



Prayer Life

As we stated previously, prayer is conversation with God (We talking to God and God talking back to us). In Frank Houghton's book, *Quiet Time*, he states the following, "If authority were needed for observing an early morning Quiet Time, the writing and example of men of God in all ages would supply it. But the example of our _____ Himself, who, 'rising up a great while before dayÖ went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed,' is sufficient evidence of its _____ importance for us." The importance of our prayer life cannot be overstated. We see numerous examples from Scripture of the importance of prayer

life in the lives of godly saints such as Moses (Num. 14:13-19), Daniel (Dn. 6:10), Nehemiah (Neh. 1:1-11), etc. What a privilege we have to converse with the Creator of the universe.

Personal Bible Study

I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be _____ to this world, but be _____ by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is _____ and _____ and perfect” (Rm. 12:1-2). The Apostle Paul tells us the reason for Bible study in this passage from his book to the Roman believers. In this statement we can see the preeminent importance of daily Bible study. As a result of our _____ (which desires to do that which is opposed to God) and the continual _____ message of our lost society on us, we have a need to have our minds transformed. The Greek word here is metamorphoo from which we derive our English word metamorphosis. The Greek word means “a change in form”² and that change comes from our mind (thinking power, reason in its moral quality and activity³) being renewed or _____ in _____ with the word of God. Consistent study of the Word of God will result in us, setting “*our mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth*” (Col. 3:2) and allowing “*the word of Christ [to] richly dwell within [us]*” (Col. 3:16). As we have discussed before, this finds its end in a transformed life.

Scripture Memorization

The importance of knowing God’s word by memory is clearly seen in Jesus’ temptation by Satan in the wilderness. The temptation is seen in Matthew 4: 1-11. Satan tempted Christ three times to compromise the _____ of _____. Because of Christ’s _____ of God’s Word, He realized that all the things that Satan tempted Him to do were _____ God’s law and He _____ that Scripture to the Tempter to stand against Him. The Psalmist also realized the importance of the memorized Word. He states in Psalm 119:9-11, “*How can a young man keep his way pure? By keeping it according to _____ . With all my heart I have sought Thee; Do not let me wander from _____ . _____ have I treasured in my heart, That I may not _____ against Thee.*” We should strive to make scripture memorization a regular part of our quiet time.



As stated before, the value of a daily quiet time cannot be overemphasized. I think I can be so bold as to say a consistent life of holiness and purity cannot be accomplished without a daily time with God. As Alan Redpath writes, “You cannot stand

Is A Quiet Time That Important?

to tell his disciples. "Send them." "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount had told them to go to him, they worshiped, doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to me, therefore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to observe all that I have commanded you. And

in these days against the power of evil unless you are _____ your soul and your _____ and _____ with the Book. 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by _____ that proceedeth out of the mouth of God' (Matthew 4:4)".⁴

The positive effects of our time in prayer, personal Bible study and scripture memorization will be very evident in our spiritual maturing process. Our relationships with our spouse, children, father, mother, friends, etc will be affected positively as we are conformed to the character of Christ (Rom. 8:9). Our assurance will grow which will result in more peace and joy; a peace that passes all comprehension.

As we have seen in our study, even Jesus Christ maintained a quiet time to commune and converse with the Father. If the God-man needed it, how much more do we.



Summary

As Christians we have the incredible opportunity to spend one-on-one time with God-the Creator of the universe (and our Heavenly Father). The key to our physical growth was to make sure we fed regularly on nourishing milk and the same is true of our spiritual growth. Peter encourages us to, "*like newborn babes, long for the pure milk of the word, that by it you may grow in respect to salvation*" (1 Pet. 2:2). This is accomplished through a regular time of Bible study. Another need for us as Christians is to talk with God. Prayer is simply conversation with our Heavenly Father. Even though we can converse with God at any time during the day, it is also valuable for us to have a special time each day to meet with God (A quiet time).

There are three key elements to a fruitful, life transforming quiet time, they are: (1) prayer life, (2) personal Bible study and (3) scripture memorization. Consistent study of the Word of God will result in us, setting "*our mind on the things above, not on the things that are on earth*" (Col. 3:2) and allowing "*the word of Christ [to] richly dwell within [us]*" (Col. 3:16). Satan tempted Christ three times to compromise the eternal truth of Scripture. As a result of Christ's knowledge of God's Word, He realized that all the things that Satan tempted Him to do were against God's law, and quoted Scripture to the Tempter to stand against Him. We should strive to make scripture memorization a regular part of our quiet time. The positive effects of our time in prayer, personal Bible study and scripture memorization will be very evident in our spiritual maturing process. Our relationships with our spouse, children, father, mother, friends, etc. will be effected positively as we are conformed to the character of Christ (Rom. 8:9).

Test Your Knowledge

1. Peter encourages us, "like newborn babes, _____ for the pure milk of the _____, that by it you may _____ in respect to _____" (1 Pet. 2:2).
2. To grow to maturity as a Christian we must _____ with God studying His Word.
3. God not only revealed His love through sending His Son to die on the Cross for us, but He displays that same love every day in giving us _____ to live by and always providing a _____ to cry on and an _____ to listen.
4. _____ means that God is everywhere at the same time.
5. Since God is omnipresent it means He is _____ with us, thus we can meet with God _____ we want and _____ we are.
6. _____ prayer is an excellent habit to develop in our daily walk.
7. Christ gave us a tremendous example of maintaining a quiet time. Mark tells us, "And in the early morning, while it was still dark, He arose and went out and departed to a _____, and was praying there" (Mk. 1:35).
8. There are three key elements to a fruitful, life transforming quiet time, they are: (1) _____ life, (2) personal _____ study and (3) _____ memorization.
9. "If authority were needed for observing an early morning Quiet Time, the writing and example of men of God in all ages would supply it. But the example of our _____ Himself, who, 'rising up a great while before day, went out, and departed into a solitary place, and there prayed,' is sufficient evidence of its _____ importance for us."
10. "I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be _____ to this world, but be _____ by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is _____ and _____ and perfect" (Rom. 12:1-2).
11. As a result of our _____ (which desires to do that which is opposed to God) and the continual _____ message of our lost society on us we have a need to have our minds transformed.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed him. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers in Galilee; there they will meet you, just as I promised you.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had met with the chief priests and had devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money. 'You are to say, "His disciples came during the night and while we were asleep and cut our way through the wall and got to the governor, and we and kept you out of it, and the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews every day.'"

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. "Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything that I have commanded you. And remember, I am with you always, to the end of the age."

12. _____ have I treasured in my heart, That I may not _____ against Thee" (Ps. 119:11).
13. As Alan Redpath states, "You cannot stand in these days against the power of evil unless you are _____ your soul and your _____ and _____ with the Book. 'Man shall not live by bread alone, but by _____ that proceedeth out of the mouth of God' (Matthew 4:4)."

Suggested Reading

On Prayer:

Bounds, E. M. *The Complete Works of E. M. Bounds*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House.

On Bible Study and Scripture Memorization:

Lahaye, Tim. *How To Study The Bible For Yourself*. Irvine: Harvest House, 1976.

McDowell, Josh. *Guide To Understanding Your Bible*. San Bernardino: Here's Life Publishers, Inc., 1982.

Warren, Richard. *Twelve Dynamic Bible Study Methods*. Wheaton: Victor Books, 1987.

Hendricks, Howard G. and William D. Hendricks. *Living By The Book*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1991.

Endnotes

- ¹ Frank Houghton. *Quiet Time* (Chicago: Inter-Varsity Christian Fellowship, 1945) p. 1.
- ² Fritz Rienecker. *Linguistic Key To The Greek New Testament* ed. Cleon Rogers (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980) p. 375.
- ³ Ibid. p. 375.
- ⁴ Alan Redpath. *Getting To Know the Will of God* (Chicago: Inter-Varsity Christian Fellowship, 1954), p. 3.



“Daily Time With God”

MATTHEW 27-28

Quotes

“There is nothing more important for the right development of the spiritual life of the Christian than regular, systematic Bible study. It is as true in the spiritual life as it is in the physical life that health depends upon what we eat and how much we eat. The souls proper food is found in one Book, the Bible.”¹

R. A. TORREY

“Prayer is a wonderful privilege. It is an audience with the King. It is talking to our Father. How strange it is that people should ask the question, ‘How much time ought I to spend in prayer?’ When a subject is summoned to an audience with his king, he never asks, ‘How much time must I spend with the king?’ His question is rather, ‘How much time will the king give me?’”²

R. A. TORREY

“So we see that we must discipline our lives for a regular healthy diet of the Word of God. We need a planned time each day for reading or studying the Bible. Every Christian who makes progress in holiness is a person who has disciplined his life so that he spends regular time in the Bible. There simply is no other way.”³

JERRY BRIDGES

“The disciples often heard Him [the Lord Jesus praying], and in their hearts there was a longing to have fellowship with God. Every born again child of God has this longing. Beloved, it is the mark of a regenerated person that, having come to the knowledge of God, he prays.”⁴

J. VERNON MCGEE

“I know of no other form of intake of the Word which pays greater dividends for the time invested than Scripture memorization.”⁵

DAWSON TROTMAN
FOUNDER - NAVIGATORS

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Suc them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they ga large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authorit on earth has been givel fore go and make disci tions baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ¹⁹and teach everywhere I have come

¹ R. A. Torrey. *How To Succeed In The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press) p. 46.

² Ibid., p. 77-78.

³ Jerry Bridges. *The Pursuit of Holiness* (Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978) p. 101.

⁴ J. Vernon McGee. *Let Us Pray* (Pasadena: Thru The Bible Books, 1985) p.9.

⁵ As quoted by Al and Lorraine Broom in *Timothy Two discipleship for Growing Christians* (Bonita: INJOY ministries, 1986) p. 31.



Prayer Life



Not too long ago my wife and I were experiencing some anxiety from a situation in which we found ourselves. Having recently returned from the mission field we were experiencing the phenomenon of "reverse culture shock." In addition, one of our pets whom we had grown attached to was seemingly on his death bed. There was also a financial burden looming on the horizon as we were with great joy expecting our first child, but our insurance with our mission had recently run out and we couldn't afford to renew it. We wondered, "Where would the money possibly come from?" Everything seemed on the verge of overwhelming us that night when we were moved to sit down on our couch together and pour our hearts out in conversation with our Heavenly Father. After reminding ourselves of the awesomeness of our God we laid our burdens at His feet and thanked Him, for we knew He would meet our needs. This is what prayer is all about, open and honest conversation with God. Augustine said, "Prayer is our speech with God."



Let us briefly review what we learned in our last lesson because the question of "When can I Pray?" is an important one. The exciting thing about the God that we serve is that He is omnipresent (Ps. 139:7-10,17-18; Acts 17:24, 27-28). _____ means that God is everywhere at the same time. This is an incredible truth to grasp and it shows a little of the nature of our awesome God. Since God is omnipresent it means He is _____ with us, thus, we can meet with God _____ we want and _____ we are. In Paul's first letter to the believers in Thessalonica he told them to "pray without ceasing" (1 Thess. 5:17). This means that we should continually be praying as things arise. We can be spontaneous in our prayer life. During our waking hours whether at work, school, home, vacation, etc. we can communicate with God through prayer. _____ prayer is an excellent habit to develop in our day to day life.

A Specific Time And Place

As we discussed in the previous chapter, even though we can converse with God at any time during the day it is also valuable for us to have a _____ time each day to meet with God (a quiet time). Some of us are "morning people" and some are "night people" so everyone's quiet time with God will not be at the same time.



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief. **A Pattern For Prayer** devised a plan, they ga large money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been give fore go and make dis tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everywhere I have come

We see that even Christ gave us an example of maintaining a quiet time. Mark tells us, "And in the early morning, while it was still dark, He arose and went out and departed to a _____, and was praying there" (Mk. 1:35). Our quiet time should be a time when we are _____ and _____ so that we can _____ on what we study and on our prayer to God. The key for most of us is that the time and the place be as _____ as possible. The place where we meet with God should be a quiet place where we can concentrate on what we have read from God's Word and meditate on the implications to our lives and the lives of our family. We will also appreciate the quiet place as we unreservedly pour out our hearts to our Father in adoration, praise and thanksgiving, confession, intercession and petition.



A note must be made here that there is no perfect pattern for prayer. Examples exist in Scripture of _____ prayers of petition (Lk.23:46; Job 13:3; Ps. 4:1; Ps. 139:23), as well as _____ prayers containing many of the elements of prayer which we will now discuss (Dan. 6:10-11; 9:1-19; Jn. 17:1-26). The length and content of prayer may be dependent on the _____, thus, there is no perfect pattern. But in the following discussion we will present a pattern that may be used in our quiet time. This pattern includes the essential elements of prayer seen in many of the longer prayers of the Bible (Dan. 9:1-19; Mt. 6:9-14; Lk. 11:1-13). These essentials include (1) adoration, praise and thanksgiving, (2) confession, (3) intercession and (4) petition.

Adoration, Praise and Thanksgiving

An excellent way to start our prayers is with adoration, praise and thanksgiving. Adoration means "the act of adoring"¹ and praise means "to _____," "to express a _____ of," or "to _____."² We see a good example of this from the Psalmist.

*One thing I have asked from the Lord, that I shall seek:
That I may dwell in the house of the Lord all the days of my life,
To behold the beauty of the Lord,
And to meditate in His temple (Ps. 27:4).*

*O God, Thou art my God; I shall seek Thee earnestly;
My soul thirsts for Thee, my flesh yearns for Thee,
In a dry and weary land where there is no water.
Thus I have beheld Thee in the sanctuary,
To see Thy power and Thy glory.
Because Thy lovingkindness is better than life,*

*My lips will praise Thee.
So I will bless Thee as long as I live;
I will lift up my hands in Thy name (Ps. 63:1-4).*

Adoration and praise may include reciting some of _____ and His mighty acts from Scripture as well as from our _____ lives. This reminds us of who God really is and leads to more reverence of Him. It also reminds us of His sufficiency to handle all situations. This adoration will also move us to praise and glorify our Heavenly Father for who He is as well as all that He has done.

It is also good to start our prayer with _____ in recognition of all that God has done for us. Thanksgiving can also encompass many other things, such as thanks for:

- Answered prayer (Jn. 11:41).
- Food (Mt. 14:19; Acts 27:35; Rm. 14:6; 1Cor. 10:30; 1 Tim. 4:3-5).
- God's Blessings (Phil. 4:6; Col. 1:10-12).
- God's Wondrous Deeds (1 Chron. 16:7-10; Ps. 103: 1-22).
- Other Believers (1 Cor. 1:4; Eph. 1:15-16; Phil. 1:3-5; Col. 1:3-4; 1 Thess. 1:2; 2 Tim. 1:3; Philem. 4-5).³

Don't feel like you have to include thanks for all of these things every time. As we stated before the length and content of your prayer may be dependent on circumstances.

Confession

Out of our adoration, praise and thanksgiving will naturally come _____ of sin. This was the experience of Daniel who in his prayer recorded in Daniel 9:4-14, did not spend all of his time asking, but worshiped God and confessed his own unworthiness and the sins of his people. Confession of sin is necessary for all of us if we want to pray effectively, for God must cleanse our hearts and renew the power of His Spirit within us before He can hear and answer our prayers (Ps. 51:16, 17)."⁴

In John's first epistle he states, "If we _____ our sins, He is faithful and righteous to _____ us our sins and to _____ us from all unrighteousness" (1 Jn. 1:9). John has stated earlier in the same chapter that the reason that these things are being written is, "...so that our joy may be made complete" (1 Jn. 1:4). The Greek word used in 1 John 1:9 translated "confess" in our English Bible is homologeo meaning "to say the same thing," "to agree," "to admit," "to concede," or "to confess."⁵ John is talking here about a Christian's _____ and _____ within the family of God. He is dealing with our _____ not our _____ before God. Our position before God is

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," and he came to him, clasped his feet and kissed him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to him, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will meet you, and Jesus will go with you."

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were going to buy spices, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met with the guards and devised a plan. They gave the guards a large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His disciples came during the night and stole away the body while we were asleep.' If anyone says anything to you, just say, 'We don't know.'" So they agreed and kept their word. This is what the soldiers took the money for. They were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews ever since that day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they saw him, they worshiped, but some doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age."

secure because of our imputed (credited) righteousness from Christ, but our fellowship with the Father in our daily walk is dependent on "walking in the light" (1:5-7) as John states it.

Walking in the light means that when we do something opposite of the "light" [God's truth (1:6)] we admit it and don't lie about it before God by saying "we have no sin" (1:8). _____ restores our fellowship as the Father "*forgives us our sins and cleanses us from all unrighteousness.*" The Psalmist communicates the process of our confession and restoration beautifully, "*I acknowledged my sin to Thee, And my iniquity I did not hide; I said, 'I will confess my transgressions to the LORD; And Thou didst forgive the guilt of my sin'*" (Ps. 32:5).

Pray that God would bring to mind any unconfessed sin in your life and confess it before moving on (Job 13:23; Ps. 26:2; 139:23). Thank God for the provision of His Son on the cross that made your forgiveness possible. The guilt will be lifted and you will again be "walking in the light" of God's truth.

Intercession

Intercession is defined as "_____ petition or entreaty in favor of _____."⁶ There are many examples of intercession in the Bible. Walter Elwell gives us a list of different types of intercession that can be seen in the Scripture. They include intercession for:

- The afflicted (Ps. 10:12, 17; Ps. 74:21).
- Believers by spiritual leaders (Num. 6:22-26; 1 Sam. 12:23; Joel 2:17; Rm. 1:9-10; Rm. 15:13; 2 Cor. 13:7; Eph. 1:16; Phil. 1:3, 9-11, etc.).
- Believers in general (Eph. 6:18; James 5:16; 1 Jn. 5:16).
- Children by parents (Gen. 17:18-20; 2 Sam. 12:16; Job 1:5).
- Enemies (Jer. 29:7; Mt. 5:44; Lk. 23:34; Acts 7:60; 2 Tim. 4:16).
- Everyone (1 Tim. 2:1).
- Ministers (Rm. 15:30; 2 Cor. 1:11; Eph. 6:19; Col. 4:3; 1 Thess. 5:25; 2 Thess. 3:1; Hb. 13:18).
- Public authorities (Ezra 6:10; 1 Tim. 2:1).
- The unsaved (Rm. 10:1).⁷

Again, each prayer time may not include intercession for all these groups but they should all be included often in our prayers. Intercessory prayer is part of "loving our neighbor as ourselves." It is exciting to see God move to meet someone's needs after we have prayed for them. What a privilege we have been given to intercede for others!

Petition

Petition means "[n.] an _____ request" or "[vb.] something _____ or requested." James told the Jewish Christians he wrote to, "*You do not have because you do not ask*" (James 4:2). God will supply all our needs, And my God shall supply

_____ *your needs according to His riches in glory in* _____
 _____ " (Phil. 4:19).

and sometimes He chooses to give us our desires.

Delight yourself in the LORD; And He will give you the desires of your heart. Commit your way to the LORD, Trust also in Him, and He will do it" (Ps. 34:4-5).

The key to a successful prayer life is to pray in the will of God. John tells us in his first epistle, "*And this is the confidence which we have before Him, that, if we ask anything according to His will, He hears us. And if we know that He hears us in whatever we ask, we know that we have the requests which we have asked from Him*" (1 Jn. 5:14-15).

All petitions are answered by God in one of three ways: Yes, _____, or _____. This is because God is sovereign and wants the best for our lives. In God's plan to conform us to the image of His Son (Rom. 8:9), He is working all things for our good (Rom. 8:28). Thus, anything that we ask that does not fit into the _____ of God for our lives will not be granted.

The Attitude Of Prayer

What should be our attitude when we pray? Can we demand things of God as some claim, or should we fear (revere) God? The writer of the letter to the Hebrews states, "*Let us therefore draw near with confidence to the throne of grace, that we may receive mercy and may find grace to help in time of need*" (Heb. 4:16). We can "draw near with _____" before God's throne because we are His _____ and He wants to hear from us. Also, we need to know that we have the perfect "mediator" presenting our prayers before the Father. Jesus Christ is our "mediator or go-between" that presents our prayers before the Father. I Timothy 2:5 states, "*For there is one God, and one _____ also between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.*" We should also be reminded that we are praying to the awesome God of the universe, thus we should pray in _____. As the Psalmist says, "*He will fulfill the desire of those who fear[have a holy reverence toward] Him; He will also hear their cry and will save them*" (Ps. 145:19).

Summary

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed him. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will meet you.'"

The Guards' Report

While the women were on their way, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan, they gave them a large sum of money, and they said, "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep, we were instructed. And this is what we did.'"

The Great Commission

Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and glorified him. "Then Jesus said to them, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything that I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age.'"

Prayer is all about open and honest conversation with God. As Augustine put it, "Prayer is our speech with God." Since God is omnipresent it means He is always with us, thus we can meet with God whenever we want and wherever we are. Even though we can converse with God at any time during the day, it is also valuable for us to have a special time each day to meet with God (a quiet time). Although there is no perfect pattern for prayer an examination of some of the longer prayers of Scripture reveals these essentials: (1) adoration, praise and thanksgiving, (2) confession, (3) intercession and (4) petition. The key to a successful prayer life is to pray in the will of God. All petitions are answered by God in one of three ways: Yes, No, or Later. This is because God is sovereign and wants the best for our lives. In God's plan to conform us to the image of His son (Rom. 8:9), He is working all things for our good (Rom. 8:28). Thus, anything that we ask that does not fit into the sovereign plan of God for our lives will not be granted. We can "draw near with confidence" before God's throne because we are His children and He wants to hear from us. We should also be reminded that we are praying to the awesome God of the universe so we should pray in reverence. As the Psalmist says, "He will fulfill the desire of those who fear Him; He will also hear their cry and will save them" (Ps. 145:19).



Test Your Knowledge

1. Since God is omnipresent it means He is _____ with us, thus we can meet with God _____ we want and _____ we are.
2. Our quiet time should be a time when we are _____ and _____ so that we can _____ on what we study and on our prayer to God.
3. Examples exist in Scripture of _____ prayers of petition (Lk.23:46; Job 13:3; Ps. 4:1; Ps. 139:23) as well as _____ prayers containing many of the elements of prayer which we have discussed (Dan. 6:10-11; 9:1-19; Jn. 17:1-26).
4. Four essentials of prayer include: (1) adoration, praise and thanksgiving, (2) _____, (3) intercession and (4) _____.
5. Adoration means "the act of adoring" and praise means "to _____" "to express a _____ of," or "to _____."

6. Adoration and praise may include reciting some of _____ and His mighty acts from Scripture as well as from our _____ lives.
7. It is also good to start our prayer with _____ in recognition of all that God has done for us.
8. In John's first epistle he states, "If we _____ our sins, He is faithful and righteous to _____ us our sins and to _____ us from all unrighteousness" (1 Jn. 1:9).
9. _____ restores our fellowship as the Father "forgives us our sins and cleanses us from all unrighteousness."
10. Intercession is defined as "_____, petition or entreaty in favor of _____."
11. Intercessory prayer is part of "_____ our neighbor as ourselves."
12. Petition means "[n.] an _____ request" or "[vb.] something _____ or requested."
13. *And my God shall supply _____ your needs according to His riches in glory in _____.* (Phil. 4:19).
14. All petitions are answered by God in one of three ways: Yes, _____, or _____.
15. Anything that we ask that does not fit into the _____ of God for our lives will not be granted.
16. We can "draw near with _____" before God's throne because we are His _____ and He wants to hear from us.
17. We should also be reminded that we are praying to the awesome God of the universe, thus we should pray in _____.

Suggested Reading

Bounds, E. M. *The Complete Works of E. M. Bounds*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House.

Endnotes

MATTHEW 27-28
 to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan. they got large sum of money, 'You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took t **Quotes** were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. " him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, 'All authoris on earth has been giver fore go and make dis ions baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, "and teach everything I have comm said. I am with you al

- ¹ *Webster's New Collegiate Dictionary* ed. Henry Bosley Woolf (Springfield: G. & C. Merriam Co., 1980) p. 16.
- ² *Ibid.*, p. 896.
- ³ Walter A. Elwell ed. *Topical Analysis of the Bible* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1991) p. 615.
- ⁴ Moody Correspondence School Staff. *First Steps in the Christian Faith* (Chicago: The Moody Bible Institute of Chicago, 1957) p. 55.
- ⁵ Fritz Rienecker. *Linguistic Key To The Greek New Testament* ed. Cleon Rogers (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980) p. 786.
- ⁶ *Ibid.*, *Webster's Dictionary*. p. 596.
- ⁷ Elwell, *Ibid.*, pp. 608-9.



"Prayer Life"

"Prayer is a wonderful privilege. It is an audience with the King. It is talking to our Father. How strange it is that people should ask the question, 'How much time ought I to spend in prayer?' When a subject is summoned to an audience with his king, he never asks, 'How much time must I spend with the king?' His question is rather, 'How much time will the king give me?' "

R. A. TORREY

"The disciples often heard Him [the Lord Jesus praying], and in their hearts there was a longing to have fellowship with God. Every born again child of God has this longing. Beloved, it is the mark of a regenerated person that, having come to the knowledge of God, he prays."

J. VERNON MCGEE

"And I prayed to the LORD my God and confessed and said, 'Alas, O Lord, the great and awesome God, who keeps His covenant and lovingkindness for those who love Him and keep His commandments,...Righteousness belongs to Thee,...To the Lord our God belong compassion and forgiveness' "

THE PROPHET DANIEL

Quotes

"Since the Christian life is a life of family relationship, the matter of forgiveness can be best viewed in this context. We enter the family when we acknowledge Jesus Christ as our personal Saviour. That new birth into the family of God is eternal; we will never be cut off from the family. Nevertheless, relationships within the family are similar to those in an earthly family. Sometimes there comes a break in the fellowship between the father and his child. Disobedience to the father's will does this, and while it does not expel the child from the family, it does affect his fellowship and the enjoyment of his relationships and privileges in the family life. ... our confession regains the lost fellowship of the moment." 4

CHARLES RYRIE

"All teachers of Scripture conclude that the essence and the nature of prayer are nothing else than the raising of the soul or heart to God. But if the nature and the art of prayer consist in the raising of the heart, it follows that everything which is not a lifting up of the heart is not prayer. Therefore singing, speaking, and piping, when not accompanied by the rising of the heart to God, are prayers as much as the scarecrows in the garden are men. The essence is not there, but only the appearance and the name." 5

MARTIN LUTHER

"It is of little importance whether you stand, kneel, or prostrate yourself; for postures of the body are neither forbidden nor commanded as necessary. The same applies to other things: raising the head and the eyes heavenward, folding the hands, striking the breast. Only do not despise these things, because Scripture and Christ Himself praise them. Therefore St. Paul says of his prayer (Eph. 3:14): 'For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.' Again [he says] (1 Tim. 2:8): 'I will, therefore, that men pray everywhere, lifting up holy hands.' Yet it is not ill done if one who is binding sheaves in the field or lying on a bed prays with the heart alone." 6

MARTIN LUTHER

"As long as you live, guard against ever considering yourself worthy or fit to ask or to receive anything from God; do not pray unless you find that you may freely venture to base your prayer on the truthful and certain promise of your gracious God... [then God may answer your prayer], so that you may be grateful, not for your worthiness but for that truth of His with which He fulfills His promise and that mercy of His with which He made the promise." 7

MARTIN LUTHER

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women with some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded

¹R. A. Torrey. *How To Succeed In The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press) pp. 77-78.

²J. Vernon McGee. *Let Us Pray* (Pasadena: Thru The Bible Books, 1985) p. 9.

³Daniel 9:4,7,9 NASB (*New American Standard Bible*).

⁴Charles C. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press) p.147.

⁵Ewald M. Plass. *What Luther Says Vol. II* (St. Louis: Concordia Publishing House, 1959) p. 1085.

⁶*Ibid.*, p. 1087.

⁷*Ibid.*, p. 1080.



Personal Bible Study



MATTHEW 27

tell his disciples.
m. "Greetings."
him, clasped his
um. "Then Jesus said
be afraid. Go and tell m
Go."
The Great Commission
women we
one of the guards we
ad reported to the stu
ing that had happen
dial priests had met wit
devised a plan, they got
large sum of money.
You are to say "His
during the night and
while we were asleep."
gets to the governor, we
and keep you out of tr
Soldiers took the money
were instructed. And thi
widely circulated among
every day.

Why Should I Study The Bible?

I became a Christian at the age of twelve. At the age of twenty-seven you would think that I would have been quite spiritually mature. Nothing could be farther from the truth. At the spiritual age of fifteen I was a spiritual "runt." Why? Because I had not presented my body as a living sacrifice to the Lord (Rom. 12:1). Such a presentation is essential for spiritual growth. It is a commitment to live life the Lord's way. That presentation, if genuine, will have some practical "outworkings." Two of the most important "outworkings" are prayer and personal Bible study. At the age of twenty-seven I developed a pattern of prayer and personal Bible study with a goal to maintain the practice daily. Now eight years later this practice has changed my life. I have read through the Bible four to five times and over the years God has taught me much about the power of prayer. I understand what Christ did for me at the cross and how He set me free to live a life of righteousness. I understand my role as husband and father from the one who instituted marriage and I realize it is my responsibility to love others as Christ loves me. My wife and I are on a budget because we understand that the material possessions and finances we have are God's and we are called to be His wise stewards. Such spiritual growth is impossible without the commitment and practice of personally studying the Bible for yourself. The word of God changed me and it can change you too!

Some Review

As mentioned in *DAILY TIME WITH GOD*, the Apostle Paul tells us the reason for Bible study in this passage from his book to the Roman believers. "I urge you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be _____ to this world, but be _____ by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is _____ and _____ and perfect" (Rm. 12:1-2). In this statement we can see the importance of daily Bible study. As a result of our _____ (which desires to do that which is opposed to God) and the continual _____ message of our lost society on us, we have a need to have our minds renewed daily. Bible study is essential for at least three practical reasons. They include: (1) spiritual _____, (2) spiritual _____ and (3) spiritual _____.¹



Practical Reasons For Bible Study

to tell them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they got huge sum of money. "You are to say. 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it; soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach them to obey. There I am

Spiritual Growth

"Like newborn babes, long for the pure milk of the word, that by it you may grow in respect to salvation" (I Peter 2:2). My wife and I recently had our first child. The comparison that Peter was making becomes very vivid when we are awoken at three in the morning by a "newborn baby longing for pure milk." At that point nothing else will satisfy that little guy except the "the pure milk" of his mother. The goal of his longing is to meet his immediate hunger but the end result of his longing is growth. He will grow physically as long as he is feeding on the pure milk of his mother and the same is true with us. In our spiritual hunger, our goal should not be just to grow in biblical _____ but ultimately to grow in spiritual _____ (spiritual growth). You can grow in biblical knowledge without growing in spiritual maturity. As Hendricks questions, "Are you growing old, or growing up?" Spiritual _____ can be defined as "the depth of our knowledge of God" not the amount we know about God's word. We must seek to "know God" not just "know about" Him.

Spiritual Maturity

"Concerning him we have much to say, and it is hard to explain, since you have become dull of hearing. For though by this time you ought to be teachers, you have need again for someone to teach you the elementary principles of the oracles of God, and you have come to need milk and not solid food. For everyone who partakes only of milk is not accustomed to the word of righteousness, for he is a babe. But solid food is for the mature, who because of practice have their senses trained to discern good and evil" (Heb. 5:11-14).

This passage makes it very clear that with time we are all to grow in our understanding of spiritual things. Just as a _____ baby goes from milk to solid food, in time we are to do the same in _____ things. We are first to learn the "elementary principles" or "milk" (the basics) and then move on to solid food (bible doctrine and ministry skills). No one ever became a man without being a boy first; the same is true of spiritual growth. As Hendricks and Hendricks state, "... the writer says you are mature if you've trained yourself through constant use of Scripture to distinguish _____ and _____."²

Spiritual Effectiveness

"All Scripture is inspired by God and profitable for _____, for reproof, for _____, for training in _____; that the man of God may be adequate, equipped for every good work" (2 Tim. 3:16-17). Hendricks and Hendricks tell us the importance of knowing God's word as it relates to spiritual effectiveness.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women with some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep gets to the governor we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. Then they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and in the

Read Repeatedly

The starting point is to read the book you have chosen through _____ times. If it is a shorter book, try to read it through each day for a week in one setting. You will be amazed at how quickly you understand the overall thrust of the book. Also, each time you will see something different that you did not see before.

Ask Preliminary Questions

After you have read it through several times, start to record the answers from the test to the following preliminary questions. [It is good to keep a notebook in which you record all your observations.]

1. Who is the author?
2. What are his circumstances at the time of writing?
3. Who are the recipients?
4. What can you learn about them (Jew or Gentile, wealthy or poor, etc.)?
5. From where was the book written?
6. When was the book written?
7. Does the book give any indication of the reason it was written?
8. Are there any problems being addressed?

Outline The Book

At this point you may want to try your hand at outlining the book. There is no better method to push you to look at the _____ of the overall book. If you have a Bible that is already outlined you may want to purchase one without outlined divisions and try your hand at it before looking at the way the author of your Bible chose to outline the book. Be careful not to depend on the chapter divisions as these were not part of the original text but were added in the fourteenth century. Sometimes a single subject will cover two or three chapters.

Study The Paragraphs

After outlining the book, the next step is to study the book paragraph by paragraph. The _____ of thought in the Bible is the paragraph. In each paragraph the author has a _____ idea (the subject) and is saying something about that central idea (the complement). As we observe, we should notice and record:

1. What things are emphasized?
2. What things are repeated?
3. What things are related?
4. What things are alike?

5. What things are unlike?
6. What things are true to life? ⁴

In addition notice:

7. Thoughts that are associated (...and)
8. Thoughts that are contrasted (...but.....)

To sum up your observations write down the subject (the central idea) plus the what the writer is saying about the central idea (the complement). The central idea + the complement = the _____ of the paragraph.



Interpretation is the process of discovering the meaning intended by the author for his _____ audience and the significance of that meaning to _____. Consequently, an accurate interpreter tries to recreate the meaning of the message as if he himself were the writer so that he will understand the passage's significance.

Accurate interpretation depends on two things:

1. One's ability to ask interpretive questions about the text.
2. One's ability to research answers to these questions.

Ask Interpretive Questions

Interpretive questions will deal with the following important elements:

- Defining important terms. (What does the writer mean by this term?)
- Observing the context of the surrounding verses, the chapter, the book, and the Bible as a whole. (What did the writer discuss before this passage and what does he discuss after it?)
- Probing cultural differences. (What did a head-covering mean in that culture?)
- Discerning figurative language in the passage. (Is there comparative language? or, Are there overstatements?) [More of this will be dealt with later under "Bible Interpretation."]

Answer Interpretive Questions

After we record a list of questions dealing with those things we do not understand, we need to search for answers. We should always start with the Bible text itself since

1. Is there an example for me to follow?
2. Is there a sin to avoid?
3. Is there a promise to claim?
4. Is there a prayer to repeat?
5. Is there a command to obey?
6. Is there a condition to meet?
7. Is there a verse to memorize?
8. Is there an error to mark?
9. Is there a challenge to face? ⁶

Record your answers in your notebook.

Zuck gives us these hints about application:

"Think of application in terms of relationships: your relationship to God, to Satan, to others (at home, church, work, school), to the world, and to yourself.

Recognize that application can be in the form of improved attitudes as well as in improved actions. Attitudinal responses may take longer to develop.

Make application personal. Use the words *I, me, my, mine*, not *we, us, our*. Application statements that remain in the "we" category are too general.

Also, be specific. Rather than saying, "I should love my wife more," be specific by saying something like this: "I will take my wife out to dinner this Friday evening." Or, "On my way home from work Thursday I will buy my wife flowers." Or, "I will not criticize my wife any time this week."⁷

Apply The Truths

We need to understand that in our own strength it is impossible for us to apply these principles to our lives. We need to ask the _____ to help us apply the principles in the areas of our life where they are needed. It is when we depend on the Spirit that He will help us to apply these truths in a way that over time change us and make us more _____. "As the Word of God penetrates our souls, it enables us to see areas where improvement is needed and enables us also to overcome weaknesses by the Holy Spirit's enabling and to 'grow thereby' (I Peter 2:2, KJV). Knowing the truth of God is essential, but blessing comes from *doing* it. As Johann Bengel wrote in 1742, "Apply yourself _____ to the text and apply the text _____ to yourself."⁸



Summary

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded you to do.

Bible study is essential for at least three practical reasons. They include: (1) spiritual growth, (2) spiritual maturity, and (3) spiritual effectiveness. Bible study is carried out in a four step approach. The steps are as follows: (1) prayer for illumination, (2) observation, observation, observation, (3) interpretation, and (4) application. Before starting my personal Bible study it is essential for me to spend a few minutes clearing my mind and praying for the Holy Spirit to "cast His light" on His word as I study. The next step is observation which deals with the question, "What do I see?". In this process I am to: read repeatedly, ask preliminary questions, outline the book and then study individual paragraphs. After reviewing my recorded observations I need to write out the main theme of the passage. The next step is interpretation which is the process of discovering the meaning intended by the author for his original audience and the significance of that meaning to them. In interpretation I ask interpretive questions, research and answer those interpretive questions, and then write a summary paragraph in my own words of what the author is saying. The last step is to apply what I have learned to my attitudes and actions. It is through the power and influence of the Holy Spirit that I am able to do this in a way that my life is transformed.



Test Your Knowledge

1. As a result of our _____ (which desires to do that which is opposed to God) and the continual _____ message of our lost society on us, we have a need to have our minds renewed daily.
2. Bible study is essential for at least three practical reasons which include: (1) spiritual _____, (2) spiritual _____, and (3) spiritual _____.
3. The second step in personal Bible study is _____ which deals with the question, "What do I see?".
4. In the process of observation I am to: read repeatedly, ask _____ questions, outline the book, then study _____ paragraphs.
5. After reviewing my recorded observations I need to write out the _____ of the passage.

6. The third step is _____ which is the process of discovering the meaning intended by the author for his _____ audience and the _____ of that meaning to them.
7. In the process of interpretation I ask _____ questions, _____ and answer those questions, and then write a summary paragraph in my own words of what the _____ is saying.
8. _____ involves drawing life principles out of the Word of God and _____ them to my life.
9. "The Bible was not written to satisfy your _____; it was written to _____ your life. The ultimate goal of Bible study, then, is not to do something to the _____, but to allow the _____ to do something to you, so truth becomes tangent to life."
10. The last step is to apply what I have learned to my _____ and _____. It is through the power and influence of the _____ that I am able to do this in a way that my life is transformed.

Helpful Resources

Bible Dictionaries

- Unger, Merrill F. *Unger's Bible Dictionary* (Chicago: Moody Press) 1985.
- Tenney, Merrill. *The Zondervan Pictorial Bible Dictionary, rev.* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House) 1987.
- Vine, W. E., Merrill F. Unger and William White, Jr. *Vine's Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers) 1985.

Bible Handbooks

- Halley, Henry. *Halley's Bible Handbook* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House) 1927.
- Unger, Merrill F. *Unger's Bible Handbook* (Chicago: Moody Press) 1966.

Bible Atlases

- Aharoni, Yohanan and Michael Avi-Yonah. *The Macmillan Bible Atlas rev.* (New York: Macmillan Publishing Company) 1977.
- Frank, Harry Thomas ed. *Atlas of the Bible Lands rev.* (Maplewood: Hammond Incorporated) 1990.

Bible Concordances

- Thomas, Robert L., ed. *New American Standard Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible* (Nashville: A. J. Holman Co.) 1981.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor. we and keep you out of it. soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded

Strong, James. *The New Strong's Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers) 1984.

Bible Commentaries

Walvoord, John F. and Roy B. Zuck., eds. *The Bible Knowledge Commentary - OT & NT* (Wheaton: Victor Books) 1983.

Gaebelein, Frank., gen. ed. *The Expositor's Bible Commentary OT & NT* in 12 volumes (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House) 1975-.

Suggested Reading

LaHaye, Tim. *How To Study The Bible For Yourself*. Irvine: Harvest House, 1976.

McDowell, Josh. *Guide To Understanding Your Bible*. San Bernardino: Here's Life Publishers, Inc., 1982.

Warren, Richard. *Twelve Dynamic Bible Study Methods*. Wheaton: Victor Books, 1987.

Hendricks, Howard G. and William D. Hendricks. *Living By The Book*. Chicago: Moody Press 1991.

Zuck, Roy B. *Basic Bible Interpretation*. Wheaton: Victor Books, 1991.

Endnotes

¹ Howard G. Hendricks and William D. Hendricks. *Living By The Book* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1991) pp. 18-21.

² Ibid. p. 20.

³ L. S. Chafer. *Major Bible Themes* rev. John F. Walvoord (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1974) p. 33.

⁴ Hendricks and Hendricks. Ibid., p. 170.

⁵ Ibid. p. 284.

⁶ Ibid. p. 308.

⁷ Roy B. Zuck. *Basic Bible Interpretation* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1991) p. 290.

⁸ Ibid., p. 292.



“Personal Bible Study”

Quotes

“What is the aim of the Bible? The text tells us: in order that you might grow. Please note, it is not that you may know. Certainly you can’t grow without knowing. But you can know and not grow. The Bible was written not to satisfy your curiosity but to help you conform to Christ’s image. Not to make you a smarter sinner but to make you like the Savior. Not to fill your head with a collection of biblical facts but to transform your life (commenting on 1 Peter 2:2).”¹

HOWARD HENDRICKS

WILLIAM HENDRICKS

“There is nothing more important for the right development of the spiritual life of the Christian than regular, systematic Bible study. It is as true in the spiritual life as it is in the physical life that health depends upon what we eat and how much we eat. The soul’s proper food is found in one Book, the Bible.”²

R. A. TORREY

“So we see that we must discipline our lives for a regular healthy diet of the Word of God. We need a planned time each day for reading or studying the Bible. Every Christian who makes progress in holiness is a person who has disciplined his life so that he spends regular time in the Bible. There simply is no other way.”³

JERRY BRIDGES

“Granted, some passages of the Bible...are difficult to understand. And yet the basic message of the Bible is simple enough for any person to comprehend. The Scriptures are not obscure in themselves.”⁴

ROY ZUCK

“The work of the Holy Spirit in interpretation does not mean that He gives some interpreters a “hidden” meaning divergent from the normal, literal meaning of the passage.Only by the Holy Spirit can believers apply, that is, personally appropriate the Scriptures.”⁵

ROY B. ZUCK

“The step of observation requires you to assume the role of a biblical detective, searching for clues as to the meaning of the text.”⁶

HOWARD HENDRICKS

WILLIAM HENDRICKS

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers in Galilee; there they will meet you, just as I promised you.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to tell the chief priests what had happened, the chief priests had met with the guards and devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money. 'You are to say, "His disciples did this during the night and while we were asleep,"' they said. 'Go and tell the governor, and we will keep you out of trouble.' So the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews ever since that day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. Then Jesus said, "All authority on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

"We are responsible then to seek to know the truth as presented in God's Word. This is essential for our own spiritual lives and for effectiveness in ministering to others. In sharing the Word of God, whether in personal counseling, teaching a Sunday School class or Bible study group, or preaching, the knowledge we impart, based on our understanding of the Scriptures, will definitely affect others. Their lives are in our hands."⁷

ROY B. ZUCK

"But unfortunately, many people today have decided that the laws of logic do not apply to Scripture. To them, it doesn't really matter whether you see the text as blue and I see it as green. In fact, it doesn't really matter what color that text actually is. For them, the meaning of the text is not in the text, it's in their response to the text. And everyone is free to have his or her own response. Meaning becomes purely subjective."⁸

HOWARD HENDRICKS
WILLIAM HENDRICKS

"Neglecting to apply the Scriptures reduces Bible study to an academic exercise in which we are concerned only for interpretation with little or no regard for its relevance for and impact on our lives. It is wrong to think of the Scriptures as only a sourcebook of information, as a book to be examined merely for the knowledge we can gain from it."⁹

ROY B. ZUCK

"Understanding then is just the means to a larger end — practicing biblical truth in a day-to-day life. Observation plus interpretation without application equals abortion. In other words, every time you observe and interpret but fail to apply, you perform an abortion on the Scriptures in terms of their purpose."¹⁰

HOWARD HENDRICKS
WILLIAM HENDRICKS

"Cultivate prompt, exact, unquestioning, joyous obedience to every command that it is evident from the context applies to you. Be on the look-out for new orders from your King. Blessing lies in the direction of obedience to them. God's commands are but signboards that mark the road to present success and blessedness and to eternal glory."¹¹

R. A. TORREY

Quotes

- 1 Howard G. Hendricks and William D. Hendricks. *Living By The Book* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1991) p.19.
- 2 R. A. Torrey. *How To Succeed In The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press) p. 46.
- 3 Jerry Bridges. *The Pursuit of Holiness* (Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978) p. 101.
- 4 Roy B. Zuck. *Basic Bible Interpretation* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1991) p.26.
- 5 Ibid., p.24.
- 6 Hendricks, Ibid., p.77.
- 7 Zuck. Ibid., p.14.
- 8 Hendricks, Ibid., p.197.
- 9 Zuck. Ibid., p.279.
- 10 Hendricks, Ibid., pp.284-285.
- 11 Torrey. Ibid., p. 61.



MATTHEW 27-28

15 All his disciples. 16 So
 17 in "Greetings," he s
 18 him, clasped his feet
 19 19 Then Jesus said
 20 20 said, "Go and tell m
 21 Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

22 While the women w
 23 e of the guards we
 24 d reported to the ju
 25 ng that had happen
 26 and priests had met wit
 27 sed a plan, they ga
 28 e sum of money.
 29 You ate to say, "This
 30 uring the night and
 31 hile we were asleep,"
 32 to the governor, we
 33 d keep you out of tr
 34 idiers took the money
 35 ere instructed. And thi
 36 ely circulated among
 37 y day.

The Great Commission

38 Then the eleven d
 39 ililee, to the mount
 40 d told them to go. 4
 41 im, they worshiped
 42 oubted. 43 Then Jesus
 44 d said, "All authorit
 45 earth has been giv
 46 e go and make dis
 47 ons, baptizing them i
 48 e Father and of the
 49 ay Spirit, 49 and teach
 50 n, for thus I have com
 51 e." 52

Reasons For Bible Study

1. Spiritual Growth

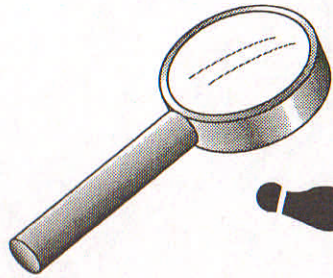


2. Spiritual Maturity



3. Spiritual Effectiveness

Bible Study Steps



What Do I See?

Observation

1. Read Repeatedly
2. Ask Preliminary Questions
3. Outline The Book
4. Study the Paragraphs

Interpretation

1. Ask Interpretive Questions
2. Answer Interpretive Questions

How Does This
Apply to me?

Application

1. Ask Application Questions
2. Apply Truths



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards were and reported to the chief priests that had happened. chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave a large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This coming the night and while we were asleep' facts to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day."

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee to the mountain had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "And go out



Scripture Memorization

MATTHEW 27

all his disciples
"Greetings."
him clasped his
"Then Jesus

**You Mean I
Can Carry A
Sword?**

I remember pulling out my sword in the train station one day. It was a couple of years ago when my wife and I were missionaries in Bulgaria. A friend and I had gone to the train station in Sofia, Bulgaria to travel to a church-based training site for Christian workers. I had gone into the station with our many bags in hand while my friend went to park the car. While waiting for him to come back, two young men passed by me and one stopped to talk. He asked where I was going and where I was from. After several minutes of conversation he abruptly left. Shortly after my friend arrived and with a puzzled look asked me where my suitcase was. I turned to look behind me where I had stacked all our luggage and my suitcase was nowhere to be found. I had been set up! The second young man had circled behind me and taken my suitcase. Anger swelled up in me and I ran to every corner of the train station looking for the culprits. I must be honest, my intent was to bodily harm them if possible. Then, I pulled out my sword. Well, technically the Spirit pulled out the sword. Ephesians 6:17 lists "the sword of the Spirit" as part of our spiritual armor. The sword of the Spirit is the Word of God! I was reminded of a verse that I had learned as I studied to teach Romans at the church-based training site. The verse was Romans 12:19, "Never take your own revenge, beloved, but leave room for the wrath of God, for it is written, 'VENGEANCE IS MINE, I WILL REPAY,' says the Lord." The sword met its mark and my sinful reaction and Satan's temptation for me to violate God's will was fended off. Knowing God's Word kept me from sinning against Him and against the two thieves.

Let's Review

In *DAILY TIME WITH GOD* we pointed out that the importance of knowing God's Word by memory is clearly seen in Jesus' response to Satan in the wilderness. We read about Satan's temptation of Christ in Matthew 4:1-11. Satan tempted Christ three times to compromise the _____ of _____. Because of Christ's _____ of God's Word, He realized that all the things that Satan tempted Him to do were _____ God's law and He _____ Scripture to the Tempter to stand against. The Psalmist also realized the importance of the memorized Word. He states in Psalm 119:9-11, "How can a young man keep his way pure? By keeping it according to _____. With all my heart I have sought Thee; Do not let me wander from _____. _____ have I treasured ["hid" KJV] in my heart, That I may not _____ against Thee."

If our desire is to "walk in a manner worthy of the calling with which we have been



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Suc- them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they gav large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Where Do I Start?
 167) to the Jews of Galilee) to the mount had him to go. " him, they worshiped doubted. 18)Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been giver fore go and make disci tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit 20)and teach everthing I have comm- and I am with you al-

called" (Eph. 4:1b), then the Psalmist has some sound advice for us. He tells us in Psalm 1:1-3, "How blessed is the man who _____ walk in the counsel of the wicked, Nor _____ in the path of sinners, Nor sit in the seat of scoffers! But his _____ is in the law of the Lord, And in His law he _____ day and night. And he will be like a tree firmly planted by streams of water, Which yields its fruit in season, And its leaf does not wither; And in whatever he does, he prospers." In addition, the Lord in the Old Testament emphasized the memorized word by using the following hyperbolic language, "You shall therefore impress these words of mine on your _____ and on your _____; and you shall bind them as a sign on your _____, and they shall be as frontals on your _____" (Deut. 11:18).

Lahaye lists seven very practical results of scripture memorization. They include:

1. It will give you _____ over sin [Ps. 119:9,11; Matt. 4:4,7,10].
2. It helps you overcome _____ [Matt. 11:18-30, Rom. 8:28].
3. It will give you _____ in sharing your faith [Ps. 119:42; 1 Pet. 3:15; Mal. 2:6].
4. It speeds up the _____ process [Rom. 12:1-2].
5. It assists you in discovering God's _____ for your life [Rom. 12:1-2].
6. It outfits you for unlimited _____ for God [Joshua 1:8; Scripture verses my addition].¹

Finally, Dawson Trotman, founder of The Navigators states the following, "I know of no form of intake of the Word which pays greater dividends for the time invested than Scripture memorization."²



The natural place to start is where you are studying in your personal _____ (You might go back and memorize some of the verses we have already covered in our discipleship series to this point). As you study you will read and study a particular verse or several verses that deal specifically with a need in your life. It may give wisdom for a difficult situation you are going through, a temptation you are experiencing or your role in your family as husband, wife, child, etc. Drawing verses from your personal Bible study prevents you from _____ and misapplying the verse.

A second way to choose verses to memorize is to decide on a specific _____ wherein you are interested in getting God's perspective. In this case you could look up, in a _____ Bible, the specific topic you would like to research. Then you could pick several verses that address that topic and memorize them. There are also some topical memory systems commercially available at Christian book stores such as *The Topical Memory System* by Navpress.

How Do I Memorize

Scripture Effectively?

Effective Scripture memorization can be carried out in the following steps:

1. Review the context of the verse and make sure you understand its true meaning.
2. Write the verse or verses down on a _____ including the reference [book, chapter and verse(s)].
3. Read the verse aloud several times.
4. Memorize the reference first then learn phrases from the verse gradually until you can say the entire verse. As you memorize visualize the verse in your mind.
5. For some, _____ it out several times during the day may be more effective (especially for visual learners like me!).
6. Now that you can repeat it with reference say it out loud several times. It is good to have a friend with whom you can practice.
7. _____ the verse(s) daily for at least a week.

The next step is to _____ on the verse(s) that you have committed to your heart. Remember what the Psalmist taught us, *"How blessed is the man who does not walk in the counsel of the wicked, Nor stand in the path of sinners, Nor sit in the seat of scoffers! But his delight is in the law of the Lord, And in His law he _____ day and night. And he will be like a tree firmly planted by streams of water, Which yields its fruit in season, And its leaf does not wither; And in whatever he does, he prospers"* (Ps. 1:1-3). Take time to ponder the implications of the verse(s) you have learned. You might meditate on the applications to your _____ with God, Satan, your spouse, your children, your government officials, your neighbors, etc.



How Long Should I Memorize Scripture?

The question of, "How long should I memorize Scripture?" is answered by another question, that being, "How long do I need to be growing spiritually?". As long as we are alive, spiritual growth is needed. Solomon was the wisest man that ever lived yet in his old age he neglected God's law and fell into sin. Attention to God's word through Bible study and Scripture memorization is a _____ essential! As Dawson Trotman taught us, it pays tremendous dividends in life.



Summary

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So they came to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will meet you."

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. ¹²When the chief priests had met with the elders and devised a plan, they gave the soldiers a large sum of money, saying to them, "You are to say, 'While we were asleep, our guards got to the governor, we bribed him and he kept you out of the tomb.' And if the soldiers take the money, we will keep you out of it." ¹³So the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. ¹⁷When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. ¹⁹Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you. ²¹And I will be with you and I will support you until the end of the age. Amen."

The importance of knowing God's Word by memory is clearly seen in Jesus' response to Satan in the wilderness. The Psalmist also realized the importance of the memorized Word. He stated in Psalm 119:11, "*Thy word have I treasured ["hid" KJV] in my heart, That I may not sin against Thee.*" Lahaye lists seven very practical results of Scripture memorization which include: victory over sin, overcoming worry, confidence in sharing my faith, speeding up the transforming process, assisting me in discovering God's will for my life, and outfitting me for unlimited service for God. The natural place for me to start is where I am studying in my personal Bible study. A second way to choose verses to memorize is to decide on a specific issue wherein I am interested in getting God's perspective. When I memorize a verse I should always memorize the reference first and then add phrases from the verse until the entire verse is memorized. I should review my verse every day for at least a week. After learning a verse I should take time to ponder the implications of the verse(s) I have learned. This should include meditating on the applications to my relationships with God, Satan, my spouse, my children, my government officials, my neighbors, etc. Attention to God's Word through Bible study and Scripture memorization is a life long essential!



Test Your Knowledge

1. Because of Christ's _____ of God's Word, He realized that all the things that Satan tempted Him to do were _____ God's law and He _____ Scripture to the Tempter to stand against him.
2. _____ *have I treasured ["hid" KJV] in my heart, That I may not _____ against Thee*" (Ps. 119:11).
3. "*You shall therefore impress these words of mine on your _____ and on your _____; and you shall bind them as a sign on your _____, and they shall be as frontals on your _____*" (Deut. 11:18).
4. Two practical results of Scripture memorization are _____ over sin and _____ worry.
5. The natural place for me start my Scripture memorization is where I am studying in my _____ Bible study.

6. A second way to choose verses to memorize is to decide on a specific _____ wherein I am interested in getting God's _____.
7. When I memorize a verse I should always memorize the _____ first and then add _____ from the verse until the entire verse is memorized.
8. After learning a verse I should take time to _____ the implications of the verse(s) I have learned. This should include _____ on the applications to my _____ with God, Satan, my spouse, my children, my government officials, my neighbors, etc.
9. Attention to God's word through Bible study and Scripture memorization is a _____ essential!

Suggested Resources

The Topical Memory System (Colorado Springs: Navpress).

Nave, Orville J. *Nave's Topical Bible* (Chicago: Moody Press) 1975.

Endnotes

¹Lahaye, Tim. *How To Study The Bible For Yourself* (Irvine: Harvest House Publishers, 1976) pp. 129-132.

²Broom, Al and Lorraine Broom. *Timothy Two Discipleship For Growing Christians* (Bonita: INJOY Ministries, 1986) p. 31.



“Scripture Memorization”

“[The Psalmist] not only heard and read it, but received it into his affections; mixed it with faith, laid it up in his mind and memory for future use; preserved it in his heart as a choice treasure, where it might dwell richly, and be of service to him on many occasions; and particularly be of the following use: that I might not sin against thee....” (commenting on Ps 119:11)¹

JOHN GILL

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women and some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, "This during the night and while we were asleep" gets to the governor. we and keep you out of it. soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mountain. had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples. baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "I will teach you to do all that I have commanded you to do. Amen."

"Here we are informed that we are well fortified against the stratagems of Satan when God's law is deeply seated in our hearts. For unless it have a fast and firm hold there, we will readily fall into sin. Among scholars, those whose knowledge is confined to books, if they have not the book always before them, readily discover their ignorance; in like manner, if we do not imbibe the doctrine of God, and are well acquainted with it, Satan will easily surprise and entangle us in his meshes. Our true safeguard, then, lies not in a slender knowledge of his law, or in a careless perusal of it, but in hiding it deeply in our hearts" (commenting on Ps 119:11).²

JOHN CALVIN

"The best thing, in the best place, for the best purpose" (commenting on Ps 119:11).³

CHARLES H. SPURGEON

"The subject or place where the word is hidden, "in the heart." Not the brain, or mind, and memory only, but the heart, the seat of affections. To hide the word in our hearts, is to understand and remember it, and to be affected to it and with it."⁴

THOMAS MANTON

Quotes

¹ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 4* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 211.

² John Calvin. *Calvin's Commentaries Vol. VI* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 409.

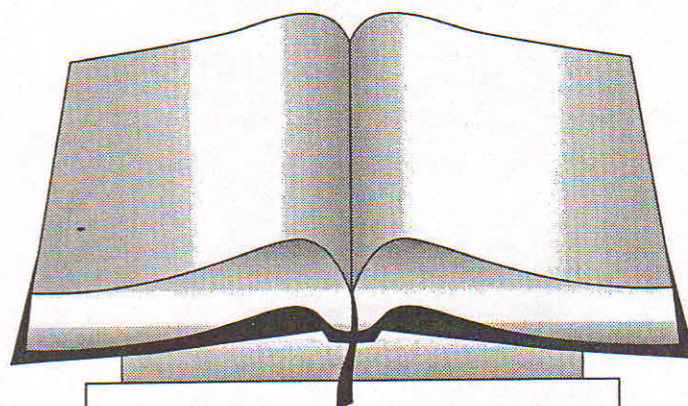
³ Charles H. Spurgeon. *The Treasury of David Vol. 3* (Peabody: Hendrickson Publishers) p. 449.

⁴ Thomas Manton. *Psalms 119 Vol. I* (Carlisle: Banner of Truth, 1990) p. 90.



Scripture Memorization

STEP BY STEP



Review weekly

**Repeat out loud
several times**

Write out repeatedly

**Memorize reference and
learn phrase by phrase**

Read verse out loud

Write verse on note card

Review context

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards were and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money, were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ¹⁹and teach everything I have commanded

Confession Of Sin



Several years ago while going to seminary I was employed along with my brother, Charlie, at a construction company. One day we were working at the company shop building some tools to aid us in our work. I was nailing some boards together when my brother saw me and decided to suggest a procedure or two that would make my job much easier and quicker. Out of my insecurity I replied in anger that I knew what I was doing and didn't need his help. Surprised by my reaction he said, "O.K.," and went back to his work. Several minutes later when my anger subsided I was miserable. I couldn't stand the guilt I was feeling. I knew the solution but it wasn't an easy thing to do. Finally I could stand it no longer. I turned to my brother and apologized for my outburst. I then confessed my sin before God and sought restoration of fellowship with Him. The guilt lifted and I felt at peace again. This is what confession of sin is all about.



One of the greatest _____ of many new Christians comes when they clearly sin after putting their faith in Christ. Many Christians struggle wondering if God will now reject them since they have sinned again! Hopefully, by now in our study, we have a clear enough understanding of what happens to us when we put our faith in Christ that we realize that God would never reject us. This is because of the fact that *all* (past, present, and future) our sins were forgiven at the point of our _____ in Christ (Col. 1:14). In addition, God has _____ to us the righteousness of Christ. Thus, is our position before God as His children, we are secure. So what happens when we sin? That is a good question. If we become involved in persistent _____ sin, God disciplines us. This subject will be discussed in a later study - *GOD'S DISCIPLINE*. Until then, let us suffice to say that God is the perfect father who loves us as His children enough to _____ us so that we can "share His holiness" (Heb. 12:1-13, esp. v. 10).

But what about personal sins that we commit each day? Is there something we need to do before God? As we discussed, since all our sins are forgiven we are secure in our standing before the Father. But in our family relationship to Him as His child, when we sin and disobey Him, our _____ is effected. The key to restoration of fellowship is the _____ of our sin before the Father. Let us look more closely at what the Bible has to say about fellowship and confession of sin.



MATTHEW 27-
 Tell his disciples.
 m. "Greetings."
 him, clasped his
 10Then Jesus sa
 afraid. Go and tell m
 they wil
**What Is
 Confession
 All About?**
 en w
 of the guards we
 reported to the chi
 ng that had happen
 hief priests had met wit
 vised a plan. they ga
 ge sum of money.
 ou are to say. 'His
 during the night and
 while we were asleep.'
 ts to the governor. we
 ad keep you out of m
 oldiers took the money
 were instructed. And th
**What Happens
 When I Sin?**
 The Great Commission
 10Then the eleven d
 Galilee, to the mount
 had told them to go. I
 im, they worshiped
 doubted. 10Then Jesus
 and said, "All authorit
 on earth has been giv
 ore go and make disc
 ions, baptizing them i
 the Father and of the
 Holy Spirit. 20and teach
 everything I have comm
 uly. I am with you al

What Is Confession?

to tell his disciples.⁹ So they greeted him, and he clasped his feet around them.¹⁰ Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell the message in all the world. I am with you always, to the end of the age." And they worshiped him and returned to Galilee, where they were teaching the people.

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were returning to the city, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan, they got a large sum of money, and they said, "You are to say, 'His disciples stole our money while we were asleep.' We shall keep you out of prison, and we shall not be troubled." And the chief priests were instructed, and they gave the money to the soldiers, and they were instructed, and they began to say this to the people every day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven returned to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said to them, "All authority on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And I will be with you and will support you until the end of the age." And the Lord Jesus said to them, "I am with you and will support you until the end of the age."

In our study *PRAYER TIME* we learned that out of our adoration, praise and thanksgiving will naturally come _____ of sin. This was the experience of Daniel, who in his prayer recorded in Daniel 9:4-14, did not spend all of his time asking, but worshiped God and confessed his own unworthiness and the sins of his people. "Confession of sin is necessary for all of us if we want to pray effectively, for God must _____ our hearts and _____ the power of His Spirit within us before He can hear and answer our prayers (Ps. 51:16, 17)."¹

John's Discussion of Fellowship and Confession

I John 1:1 - 1:9

1:1 What was from the beginning, what we have heard, what we have seen with our eyes, what we beheld and our hands handled, concerning the Word of Life—² and the life was manifested, and we have seen and bear witness and proclaim to you the eternal life, which was with the Father and was manifested to us—³ what we have seen and heard we proclaim to you also, that you also may have fellowship with us; and indeed our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ. ⁴ And these things we write, so that our joy may be made complete. ⁵ And this is the message we have heard from Him and announce to you, that God is light, and in Him there is no darkness at all. ⁶ If we say that we have fellowship with Him and yet walk in the darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth; ⁷ but if we walk in the light as He Himself is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin. ⁸ If we say that we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves, and the truth is not in us. ⁹ If we confess our sins, He is faithful and righteous to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. ¹⁰ If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His word is not in us. [emphasis mine]

In John's discussion he states, "If we _____ our sins, He is faithful and righteous to _____ us our sins and to _____ us from all unrighteousness" (1 Jn. 1:9). John stated earlier that the reason that these things are being written is, "...so that our joy may be made complete" (1 Jn. 1:4). The Greek word used in 1 John 1:9 translated "confess" in our English Bible is *homologeō* meaning "to _____ the same thing," "to agree," "to _____," "to concede," or "to confess."² In confession we say the same thing about our sin as God does; that it is a violation of His principles. Confession also includes a forsaking of that sin and turning from it. But what about a sin that we have confessed and forsaken and we fall into again down the road? Can we really say we have confessed that sin? Dr. Charles Ryrie states the following, "... true confession must include sorrow for sin and a turning from it, but true confession does not guarantee even that particular sin will be committed again. If it is, then it must be confessed again."³

Why Do We Confess? 7-28

The Greek term in the above passage translated "fellowship" is *koinonia*, "which indicates the setting aside of private interest and desires and the joining with another or others for common purposes."⁴ So, fellowship with God is accomplished when we "put aside" our interests and desires and daily live out our lives fulfilling our Father's interests and desires. John is talking here about a Christian's _____ and _____ within the family of God. He is dealing with our _____ not with our _____ before God. Our position before God is secure because of our imputed (credited) righteousness from Christ, but our fellowship with the Father in our daily walk is dependent on "walking in the light" (1:5-7).

"To walk in the light is not to become sinless; that would consist in becoming the light. Walking in the light is responding to, and being guided by, the Light — and God is Light (vs. 5). In a practical way, it means that when the Light, which God is, shines into the heart and reveals sin or darkness that is there, it is judged and put away by His grace and power. This conception is in harmony with verse 9, that 'if we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from unrighteousness.'"⁵ Walking in the light means that when we do something opposite of the "light" [God's truth (1:6)] we _____ it and do not lie about it before God by saying "we have no sin" (1:8). _____ restores our fellowship as the Father "*forgives us our sins and cleanses us from all unrighteousness.*" The Psalmist communicates the process of our confession and restoration beautifully, "*I acknowledged my sin to Thee, And my iniquity I did not hide; I said, 'I will _____ my transgressions to the LORD'; And Thou didst forgive the guilt of my sin*" (Ps. 32:5). Dr. Charles Ryrie explains it this way,

"If we need one idea to describe the result of all personal sins it would be the loss of fellowship. the believer who has been brought into the fellowship of God's family loses the enjoyment of that fellowship when he sins. He is not expelled from the family though he may lose some of the privileges of being in the family. When he confesses and is forgiven, he is restored to fellowship.

The remedy is forgiveness. For the believer, that forgiveness restores the enjoyment of fellowship in the family of God (1 John 1:9).family forgiveness restores the temporarily broken relationship within the family."⁶

Zane Hodges has this to say about confession,

"What is considered in 1 John 1:9 may be described as 'familial' forgiveness. It is perfectly understandable how a son may need to ask his father to forgive him for his faults while at the same time his position within the family is not in jeopardy. A Christian who never asks forgiveness for his sins can hardly have such sensitivity to the ways in which he grieves his Father."⁷

Pray that God would bring to mind any _____ sin in your life and confess it before moving on (Job 13:23; Ps. 26:2; 139: 23). Thank God for the provision of His Son on the cross that made your _____ possible. The guilt will be lifted and you will again be "walking in the light" of God's truth.

When Do We Confess?

Matthew 7-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women were some of the guards we and chief devisor large "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "and teach everything I have commanded you to do."

In I John 1:9 the verb translated "confess" is in the Greek present tense which in most cases indicates continuous action. Thus, we are to be continuously confessing our sins as they occur. When we are walking in fellowship with God we cannot be walking in the darkness (the result of being in the darkness is "not practicing the truth"). Thus, the way to stay in the light and in fellowship with God is by confessing our sins _____ as we do anything that we know is against God's Word or anything that the Holy Spirit convicts us is wrong. Confess the sin _____ and you will again be walking in the light and having sweet fellowship with our Heavenly Father.



In Christ's Sermon on the Mount, He reveals the importance of forgiving one another. Dr. Charles Ryrie states:

"In this interesting part of the Sermon on the Mount the Lord declares that little things harbored often lead to terrible sin. A little thing like anger against a brother may very well lead to murder and thus to hell (vv. 21-22). Likewise, a little thing like a brother having something against you leads to loss of _____ with your heavenly Father (vv. 23-24). Indeed, so important is it to have things right between members of the family of God that this takes precedence over bringing a gift to God. Notice how far-reaching this precept is, for it is not a matter of the sinning brother admitting his wrong before there can be reconciliation. If you (apparently innocent in the matter) remember that someone else has something against you (even unjustly so), it is your responsibility to go to him and seek a _____. Most of us operate on the principle that the person in the wrong should take the first step, and if he doesn't then we have no obligation to right the situation. No so, said the Lord. You must show the forgiving spirit by going to him and trying to make things right. Otherwise, your service and worship of God will be affected adversely. Good relations with the _____ depend on good relations with His _____."

"_____ our sins and _____ one another- these are constant needs in the spiritual life. Confessing keeps us right with God and other believers; forgiving keeps us right with other believers and with God."



Summary

One of our greatest fears many times as new Christians comes when we clearly sin after putting our faith in Christ. Many Christians struggle wondering if God will now reject them since they have sinned again! If we become involved in persistent unconfessed sin, God disciplines us. In our daily relationship to Him as His child, when we commit personal sin and disobey Him our fellowship is effected. The key to restoration of fellowship is the confession of our sin before the Father. "Confession of sin is necessary for all of us if we want to pray effectively, for God must cleanse our hearts and renew the power of His Spirit within us before He can hear and answer our prayers (Ps. 51:16, 17)." The Greek word used in 1 John 1:9, translated "confess" in our English Bible, is *homologeō* meaning "to say the same thing," "to agree," "to admit," or "to concede," "to confess." We say the same thing about our sin as God does; that it is a violation of His principles. The Greek term translated "fellowship" is *koinonia*, "which indicates the setting aside of private interests and desires and the joining with another or others for common purposes." So, fellowship with God is accomplished when we "put aside" our interests and desires and daily live out our lives fulfilling our Father's interests and desires. The Psalmist communicates the process of our confession and restoration beautifully, "I acknowledged my sin to Thee, And my iniquity I did not hide; I said, 'I will confess my transgressions to the LORD'; And Thou didst forgive the guilt of my sin" (Ps. 32:5). The way to stay in the light or in fellowship with God is by confessing our sins as soon as we do anything that we know is against God's Word or anything that the Holy Spirit convicts us is wrong. "Confessing our sins and forgiving one another- these are constant needs in the spiritual life. Confessing keeps us right with God and other believers; forgiving keeps us right with other believers and with God."



Test Your Knowledge

1. If we become involved in persistent unconfessed sin, God _____ us.
2. One of the greatest _____ of many new Christians comes when they clearly sin after putting their faith in Christ.
3. In our relationship to God as His child, when we sin and disobey, our _____ is affected.
4. "Confession of sin is necessary for all of us if we want to pray effectively, for God must _____ our hearts and _____ the power of His Spirit within us before He can hear and answer our prayers (Ps. 51:16, 17)."

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brethren that they are to go to Galilee; there they will see me.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were on their way, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan; they gave the women a large sum of money. 'You are to say, "This is during the night and while we were asleep,"' they said to the women. 'Go and keep you out of trouble; the soldiers took the money from you.' And the women were instructed. And the report was widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. "Then Jesus said to them, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Now go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything that I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.'"

5. In John's first epistle he states, "If we _____ our sins, He is faithful and righteous to _____ us our sins and to _____ us from all unrighteousness" (1 Jn. 1:9).
6. The Greek word used in 1 John 1:9, translated "confess" in our English Bible, is *homologeō* meaning "to _____ the same thing," "to agree," "to _____," "to concede," or "to confess."
7. The Greek term here translated "fellowship" is *koinonia*, "which indicates the setting aside of private _____ and _____ and the joining with another or others for common purposes." So, fellowship with God is accomplished when we "put aside" _____ interests and desires and daily live out our lives fulfilling our _____ interests and desires.
8. _____ restores our fellowship as the Father "forgives us our sins and cleanses us from all unrighteousness."
9. Confess your sin _____ and you will again be walking in the light and having sweet fellowship with our Heavenly Father.
10. "_____ our sins and _____ one another- these are constant needs in the spiritual life. Confessing keeps us right with God and other believers; forgiving keeps us right with other believers and with God."

Suggested Reading

Hodges, Zane C. *1 John in The Bible Knowledge Commentary - NT* eds. John F. Walvoord and Roy B. Zuck. Wheaton: Victor Books, 1983. (especially comments on 1:1-2:2)

Endnotes

- ¹ Moody. Correspondence School Staff. *First Steps in the Christian Faith* (Chicago: The Moody Bible Institute of Chicago, 1957) p.55.
- ² Fritz Rienecker. *Linguistic Key To The Greek New Testament* ed. Cleon Rogers (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980) p. 786.
- ³ Charles C. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1969) p. 145.
- ⁴ Rienecker. *Ibid.*, p. 785.
- ⁵ L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. II* (Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1989) p. 326.

- ⁶ Charles C. Ryrie. *Basic Theology* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1986) pp.228-29.
- ⁷ Zane C. Hodges. *1 John in The Bible Knowledge Commentary - NT* eds. John F. Walvoord and Roy B. Zuck (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1983) p.886.
- ⁸ Charles C. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1969) p. 148.
- ⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 150.



“Confession Of Sin”

“The plural ‘sins’ makes clear that we affirm our sinfulness by ‘confessing our sins.’ The forgiveness that comes is related to God’s faithfulness and justice. God is faithful in himself, that is, to his own nature (cf. 2 Tim. 2:13), and faithful to his promises (cf. Rom. 3:25; 1 Cor. 10:13; Heb. 10:23; 11:11). Everywhere he promises forgiveness to his children-e.g., ‘I will forgive their wickedness and will remember their sins no more’ (Jer. 31:34; cf. Mic. 7:19-20). And keeping this promise, God reveals his faithfulness and justice.”¹

GLEN W. BARKER

“As a believer in the Lord Jesus Christ, I can no more stand before God on the ground of my own spiritual experience than I could as a sinner. I stand before Him on the ground of the redemption that is in Christ Jesus. Can we go on then living in sin? No, not at all. Cleansing by the blood is our judicial cleansing, but what about the practical thing? ‘If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.’ This is practical cleansing.”²

H. A. IRONSIDE

“...He is faithful and just to forgive us our sin; forgiveness of sin here intends not the act of forgiveness, as in God, proceeding upon the bloodshed and sacrifice of Christ, which is done at once, and includes all sin, past, present, and to come; but an application of pardoning grace to a poor sensible sinner, humbled under a sense of sin, and confessing it before the Lord; and confession of sin is not the cause or condition of pardon, nor of the manifestation of it, but is descriptive of the person, and points him out, to who God will and does make known his forgiving love; for to whomsoever he grants repentance, he gives the remission of sin...”³

JOHN GILL

Quotes**MATTHEW 27-28**

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," and he came to him, clasped his feet, and kissed them. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers in Galilee; there they will meet you, as I promised you."

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to buy spices, some of the guards were awake and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan, they gave the women a large sum of money. 'You are to say, "His disciples stole our bodies while we were asleep," and then go and tell the governor, and we will keep you out of trouble.' The soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. ¹⁷When they saw him, they worshiped, but some doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. ¹⁹Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you. ²¹And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age."

"Sin, even in its inoffensive form, is exceedingly sinful in the sight of God and, were it not for the efficacious blood of Christ, would have the power to separate a Christian from God forever. But since Christ's sacrifice for sin extends to all sin, sin's power to separate a believer from God is annulled, though ..., there may be for the believer because of his sin the tragic loss of fellowship with God, or celestial joy, confidence, and peace."⁴

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

"But this confession, as it is made to God, must be in sincerity; and the heart cannot speak to God without newness of life: it then includes repentance. God, indeed, forgives freely, but in such a way, that the facility of mercy does not become an enticement to sin."⁵

JOHN CALVIN

"If we need one idea to describe the result of all personal sins it would be the loss of fellowship...the believer who has been brought into the fellowship of God's family loses the enjoyment of that fellowship when he sins. He is not expelled from the family though he may lose some of the privileges of being in the family. When he confesses and is forgiven, he is restored to fellowship."⁶

CHARLES C. RYRIE

Quotes

¹ Glen W. Barker. *I John in The Expositor's Bible Commentary* ed. Frank E. Gaebelin

(Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1981) p. 312.

² H. A. Ironside. *Epistles of John - Jude*

(Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, 1989) p. 32.

³ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 9* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 620.

⁴ L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. II*

(Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1947) p. 342.

⁵ John Calvin. *Calvin's Commentaries*

(Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 168.

⁶ Charles C. Ryrie. *Basic Theology*

(Wheaton: Victor Books, 1986) pp. 228-29.





Dealing With Temptation

MATTHEW 27-

...telling his disciples
...them. "Greetings."
...to him, clasped his
...n. 10Then Jesus sa

**The Devil
Made Me
Do It?**

...women wi
...me of the guards we
...d reported to the chi
...ing that had happen
...chief priests had met wit
...vised a plan, they gav
...rge sum of money.
...You are to say, 'His
...during the night and
...hile we were asleep,'
...ts to the governor, we
...nd keep you out of tr
...soldiers took the money
...ere. And thi
...fidel

**What Is
Temptation?**

The Great Commission

16Then the eleven d
...Galilee, to the mount
...had told them to go. 17
...him, they worshiped
...doubted. 18Then Jesus
...nd

**What Are The
Sources Of
Temptation?**

...n earth has been ever
...fore
...ions, baptizing them i
...he Holy Spirit, 20and teach
...everything I have comm
...nded you to do.

In high school my brothers and I were involved in trapping for furs to make extra money. One of the best baits for trapping fur-bearers was canned sardines. One day I realized I had no money to buy the sardines but still needed to bait my traps. I thought in my mind, "I can probably take a can or two of sardines from the store and they would never know it." I was immediately convicted that it was wrong but I continued to toy with the idea. The longer I thought about it the more appealing it became. Eventually I went to the store and as I walked by the shelf where the sardines were, I slipped two cans into my boots. I then went to the check-out counter and bought a piece of gum. Satisfied no one had seen me I headed off to bait my traps. I had allowed temptation to overcome me, and its result was sin. Was the devil totally to blame for my sin?



The Greek verb used in the New Testament translated "to try" or "to _____" is the word *periazō* which carries with it in many contexts the negative meaning of "an _____ to sin."¹ James uses it in this way in his epistle. He writes, "Let no one say when he is tempted, 'I am tempted by God'; for God cannot be tempted by evil, and He Himself does not tempt anyone." So, _____ is when we are enticed to do something that is displeasing to God and against His law.



The Bible tells us that all enticements to violate God's law come from one of three sources. The sources are:

- 1. The _____
- 2. The _____
- 3. The _____

Temptation From The World

In John's first epistle he states the following, "Do not love the _____, nor the things in the _____. If anyone loves the _____, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh and the lust of the eyes and the



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, 'You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, and teach everything I have commanded you to do."

boastful pride of life, is not from the Father, but is from the _____. And the _____ is passing away, and also its lusts; but the one who does the will of God abides forever" (I John 2:15-17). Here, the word "world" (Gr. *kosmos* or *cosmos*) is being used in the sense of "... an entity hostile to God (cf. 4:4), [and] is always a seductive influence which Christians should continually resist (cf. John 15:18-19; James 4:4. ... The world competes for the love of Christians and one cannot both love it and the Father at the same time."² "The word [*cosmos*] means *order, system, or regulation*, and indicates that the world is an order or system, but in every instance—and there are many—where a _____ feature of the world is in view, this *cosmos* world is said to be opposed to God. It is declared to have originated -in its plan and order-with Satan. He promotes it and is its prince and god. This *cosmos* system is largely characterized by its _____ and _____ and these become allurements to the Christian who is in this *cosmos* though not part of it. These features of the *cosmos* are often close counterfeits of the things of God and in no place does the believer need divine guidance more than when attempting to draw a line of separation between the things of God and the things of Satan's *cosmos*."³

We need here to also be reminded of a verse that we are becoming very familiar with from the Apostle Paul. Romans 12:2 reads, "And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect." We are continually bombarded by temptation to be conformed to the world or our culture's accepted _____, actions and _____ which are in direct opposition to God's. We want to do as the crowd is doing so we will not look or appear to be different. This is fine when it does not involve a compromise of God's truth, but when it does and we conform, we become "an enemy to God" (James 4:4).

Temptation From The Flesh

In Paul's letter to the Galatian believers he states the following, "But I say, walk by the Spirit, and you will not carry out the desire of the flesh. For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please" (Gal. 5:16-17). The Greek word translated "flesh" here is *sarx*. Chafer states of the word, "...when sustaining an ethical significance [which it is in our passage], [it] refers to that part of man which, because of the fall, is opposed to God and to holiness. It is a _____ which, though expressing itself through the deeds of the body, is, nevertheless, to be identified as that which is immaterial and related to the material only as all that is immaterial is resident in, and expressed through, the material."⁴ So the "flesh" here is the _____ nature we inherit from Adam that has a natural bent toward sin. We are all born with such a nature (Rom. 5:12).

Paul expressed his struggle with the flesh in Romans chapter seven and stated, "I know that nothing good dwells in me, that is, in my flesh; for the wishing is present in me, but the doing of good is not" (Rom. 7:18). When we become Christians we are said to

have "died to sin." Paul goes on to explain that this death to sin means that we are no longer "slaves to sin," (i.e. it does not sovereignty reign over us anymore) not that our sin natures were annihilated. We will struggle against our sin nature as long as we are on this earth (Gal. 5:17).

Temptation From the Devil

The third source of temptation we see in Scripture is the devil. Paul states in Ephesians 6:12, "For our struggle is not against flesh and blood, but against the rulers, against the powers, against the world forces of this darkness, against the spiritual forces of wickedness in the heavenly places." The Greek word translated "struggle" was a word that referred "particularly to a 'hand to hand fight' " and was a sport "characterized by trickery, cunningness, and strategy."⁵ In this passage (6:10-20), we are exhorted to, "Put on the full armor of God, that you may be able to stand firm against the schemes of the devil." Chafer states, "...the uttermost device and power of Satan [is not] inspired by any _____ against regenerate men as such. His enmity is against God as it has been since his fall in the unknown ages past, and against the believer only on the ground that he has partaken of the _____ nature. The "fiery darts" of the wicked one are aimed at God alone. To possess the priceless indwelling presence of the divine nature is to become so _____ with God that His enemy becomes the enemy of the one who is saved."⁶ Peter tells us, "Be of sober spirit, be on the alert. Your adversary, the _____, prowls about like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour" (1 Peter 5:8).



That is a good question. How many times do we, as Christians, ask this question in our lives? Let us look into the Scriptures for the answer. In the book of Hebrews we read a very interesting verse, "For we do not have a high priest who cannot sympathize with our weaknesses, but One who has been tempted in all things as we are, yet without sin" (Hebrews 4:15). The writer of Hebrews is discussing the effectiveness of Christ's intercession as our High Priest. He says that Jesus can be sympathetic since He was "tempted in all things as we are, yet _____ sin." Here we have our same Greek word *periazō* meaning "an enticement to sin." So, Christ was enticed to sin but He never fell to that temptation did. So, temptation is not sin. In fact, Paul assures the Corinthian believers that, "No temptation has overtaken you but such as is common to man; and God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will provide the way of escape also, that you may be able to endure it" (1 Cor. 10:13). Every one of us will be tempted to sin and whatever type of temptation it is _____ have faced it. In every case though, God "will provide the way of _____" so that we don't have to fall to that temptation.

In James' epistle he gives a step by step description of how temptation leads to sin and death. In dealing with temptation we ultimately make a choice to _____ or to

How Do We React To

Temptation?

As we read in Paul's letter to the Corinthians, "No temptation has overtaken you but such as is common to man; and God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will provide the way of escape also, that you may be able to endure it." God always provides "a way of _____" when temptation comes into our lives. So, how do we react when temptation comes? How do we escape the enticement of sin? The Scriptures give us some help.

1. Be on the Alert and Perceptive.

Peter says, "Be of sober spirit, be on the alert. Your adversary, the devil, prowls about like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour" (1 Peter 5:8). We can not afford to go to sleep in the midst of the battle. Satan is constantly looking for a time of _____ and drowsiness in our lives to make us fall. We must not only be alert but also _____ to discern the "schemes of the devil." This only comes when we have our mind "sharpened" by constant training from the Word of God. The Psalmist says, "How can a young man keep his way pure? By keeping it according to Thy word. With all my heart I have sought Thee; Do not let me wander from Thy commandments. Thy word I have treasured in my heart, That I may not _____ against Thee" (Psalm 119:9-11).

2. Yield to the Spirit's Power.

It is important that when we are in the midst of temptation we remember where our _____ to overcome temptation comes from. Paul tells us in Galatians 5:16, "But I say, walk by the _____, and you will not carry out the desire of the flesh." Paul struggled with falling to temptation early in his Christian walk (Rom. 7:14-25) but gained the victory when he realized, "For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has set [him] you free from the law of sin and death" (Rom. 8:2). In the midst of temptation the power of the indwelling Spirit will give us _____ when we admit our inability to resist by ourselves and yield to God's power to carry us through.

3. Flee the Situation!

In some situations the wisest advice is to _____ the situation. This is the advice Paul gave the Corinthians when He told them to, "flee from idolatry" (1 Cor. 10:14). He also told Timothy to "flee from youthful lusts" (2 Tim. 2:22). Joseph's response to Potiphar's wife is a perfect example of this when she attempted to seduce him (Gen. 39; esp. v. 12). If you are in a situation where the temptation to sin can be _____ from, do so!

Finally there are situations where an _____ or a _____ may be tempting us to sin. Dr. Charles Ryrie explains, "A ...resource which the believer has in

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Succ them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they gat large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of tr soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authorit on earth has been giver fore go and make dis tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have come

some temptation situations is to destroy that which may become an instrument or means of sin. This principle is stated in Romans 13:14: 'But put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ, and make not provision for the flesh to fulfill the lusts thereof.' [KJV]. Not providing for the flesh may mean getting rid of certain things in the life which [create a temptation]...to sin. [i.e. Acts 19:11-20]. ...[Another] resource which the believer may use to help him overcome temptation is good company. After advising Timothy to flee youthful lusts, Paul adds: 'But follow righteousness, faith, charity [love], peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart' (II Tim. 2:22) [KJV]. Good companions can help prevent temptation taking the wrong course. The proverb puts it this way: 'He who walks with wise men becomes wise, but the companion of fools will suffer harm' (13:20 RSV)."¹⁹

We have been given the resources for victory if we will only choose to walk in obedience to God's law and dependence on His Spirit!



Summary

The Greek verb used in the New Testament translated "to try" or "to tempt" is the word *periazō* which carries with it in many contexts the negative meaning of "an enticement to sin." So, temptation is when we are enticed to do something that is displeasing to God and against His law. The Bible tells us that all enticements to violate God's law come from one of three sources. The sources are: (1) The World, (2) The Flesh and (3) The Devil. In regard to the temptation of the world, we are being continually bombarded to be conformed to the world or our culture's accepted attitudes, actions and standards which are in direct opposition to God's. Also, when we become Christians we are said to have "died to sin." Paul goes on to explain that this death to sin means that we are no longer "slaves to sin," (i.e. it does not sovereignty reign over us anymore, not that our sin natures were annihilated). We will struggle against our sin nature as long as we are on this earth (Gal. 5:17). We also are at odds with Satan since we are identified with God through being partakers of the divine nature. Temptation is not sin but it can easily lead to sin unless we take action to prevent it. Some steps we need to take in dealing with temptation include: (1) being on the alert and perceptive, (2) realizing where our power is to overcome temptation, (3) in some cases fleeing or (4) in other cases destroying the object of temptation or investing less time in the relationship that causes the temptation. We have been given the resources for victory if we will only choose to walk in obedience to God's law and dependence on His Spirit!



Test Your Knowledge

MATTHEW 27-28

1. The Greek verb used in the New Testament translated "to try" or "to _____" is the word *periazō* which carries with it in many contexts the negative meaning of "an _____ to sin.
2. _____ is when we are enticed to do something that is displeasing to God and against His law.
3. The Bible tells us that all enticements to violate God's law come from one of three sources. The sources are: (1) The _____, (2) The _____, (3) The _____.
4. "The word [*cosmos*] means *order, system, or regulation*, and indicates that the world is an order or system, but in every instance—and there are many—where a _____ feature of the world is in view, this cosmos world is said to be opposed to God."
5. The "flesh" is the _____ we inherit from Adam that has a natural bent toward sin.
6. Peter tells us, "Be of sober spirit, be on the alert. Your adversary, the _____, prowls about like a roaring lion, seeking someone to devour (1 Peter 5:8)."
7. Christ was enticed to sin but He never did. So, temptation is _____ sin.
8. "The source of temptation [as the result of our sin nature] is from _____ a person; it is his own _____, lust, or inner craving. He is dragged away and enticed.
9. Paul infers that the struggle between the flesh and the Spirit will push us to _____ on being led by the Spirit (i.e. dependence on God) (Gal. 5:16-25).
10. Testings are God's way of offering us _____ for approval and _____; they are the way of Satan's defeat.
11. God always provides "a way of _____" when temptation comes into our lives.
12. Some actions we need to take in dealing with temptation include: (1) being on the _____ and perceptive, (2) realizing where our _____ is to overcome temptation, (3) in some cases _____ or (4) in other cases destroying the _____ of temptation or investing less time in the _____ that causes the temptation.

Suggested Reading

- Ryrie, Charles C. *Balancing the Christian Life*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1969.
- Bridges, Jerry. *The Pursuit of Holiness*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Such greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. "To him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been therefore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded you to do.

Endnotes

- ¹ Walter Bauer, W. F. Arndt, F. W. Gingrich and F. W. Danker. *A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament And Other Early Christian Literature* 2 ed. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979) p.640.
- ² Zane C. Hodges. *I John in The Bible Knowledge Commentary - NT* eds. John F. Walvoord and Roy B Zuck (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1983) p.891.
- ³ L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology* Vol. II (Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1947) p. 330.
- ⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 189.
- ⁵ Fritz Rienecker. *Linguistic Key To The Greek New Testament* ed. by Cleon Rogers (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980) p. 541.
- ⁶ Chafer. *Ibid.*, pp. 331-32.
- ⁷ J. Ronald Blue. *James in The Bible Knowledge Commentary - NT* eds. John F. Walvoord and Roy B Zuck (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1983) p. 822.
- ⁸ Charles C. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1969) p.138.
- ⁹ *Ibid.*, pp. 141-43.



“Dealing With Temptation”

“...the source of temptation lies within [the man] himself. He is tempted 'by his own evil desire.' James personifies man's sinful desire and identifies it as the efficient cause of temptation.”¹

DONALD W. BURDICK

“John depicts the world in darkness and in opposition to Christ; the world is hostile to Christ and all that He stands for, but this is because the world is blind.”²

LEON MORRIS

Quotes

"The change that did take place in Adam's nature was as follows: when Adam sinned he lost his favorable disposition toward God and became thoroughly confirmed in a disposition of enmity against God. When man decided to be his own sovereign, he could not tolerate God's claim of sovereignty over him [commenting on the Fall of man]."³

RENALD E. SHOWERS

"...evil spirits imperil man's well-being by subjecting him to temptation.... 'the prince of the power of the air, the spirits that are now at work in the hearts of disobedience' (Eph. 2:2, Weymouth) may be thought of as conjointly, perpetually, and indefatigably engaged in a vast program of suggestion and solicitation for evil."⁴

MERRILL F. UNGER

"...While temptation is common to man, the believer does not have to yield to it, for God in his mercy makes ways to escape so that we can bear it. Thus the believer, though never free from exposure to temptation, need not succumb to it. Indeed, spiritual believers are the more confronted with temptation."⁵

CHARLES C. RYRIE

"We note that James does not say: 'Each one is tempted by the devil or by wicked men who act as the devil's tools.' That would go only halfway in refuting the charge against God; it would also fail to put the blame where it must eventually be put, namely on ourselves, for James has this in mind."⁶

R. C. H. LENSKI

"Lust conceives when it allows itself to be excited by its object; it becomes like a female that is hot for impregnation and then gives birth to sin."⁷

R. C. H. LENSKI

"If I live longer, I certainly want to write a book on temptations, for without these a man cannot appreciate Holy Scripture, faith, or the fear and love of God; nay, he who has never been in temptations cannot know what it means to have hope."⁸

MARTIN LUTHER

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "See them. 'Greetings,' he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed them." ⁹ Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards Report

¹¹ While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it; soldiers took the money; were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶ Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped, doubted. ¹⁸ Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given; fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰ and teach everything I have commanded. I am with you all

"In the face of any and all temptation the believer has three general responsibilities. First, he is to rejoice in the midst of testing. Second, Christians have the responsibility to endure temptation. Third, the believer should be in prayer about temptation." ⁹

CHARLES C. RYRIE

"We are drawn away from watchfulness by overconfidence. We come to believe we are beyond a particular temptation. We look at someone else's fall and say, 'I would never do that.' But Paul warned us, 'If you think you are standing firm, be careful that you don't fall (I Corinthians 10:12). Even when helping a fallen brother, we are to watch ourselves lest we also be tempted (Galatians 6:1).'"¹⁰

JERRY BRIDGES

"No one overcomes the corruptions of his heart except by the enabling strength of the Spirit of God. Peter said that God has given us, 'His very great and precious promises, so that through them you may participate in the divine nature and escape the corruption in the world' (2 Peter 1:4). Through participation in the divine nature we escape corruption — and this participation is through the indwelling Holy Spirit."¹¹

JERRY BRIDGES

"The most effective remedy for temptations is to draw our thoughts away from them, that is, to speak about the Venetians or about other matters which have no bearing whatever on your trouble, or to busy yourself with prayer or the simple text of the Gospel."¹²

MARTIN LUTHER

Quotes

- ¹ Donald W. Burdick. *James in The Expositor's Bible Commentary* Vol. 12. Frank E. Gaebelin gen. ed. (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1981) p. 172.
- ² Leon Morris. *The Gospel According To John* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing Company) p. 126.
- ³ Renald E. Showers. *The New Nature*. (Neptune: Loizeauz Brothers, 1986) p. 24.
- ⁴ Merrill F. Unger. *Biblical Demonology* (Grand Rapids: Kregel Publishing House, 1994).
- ⁵ Charles C. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1969) p. 135.
- ⁶ R. C. H. Lenski. *The Interpretation of the Epistle of the Hebrews and the Epistle of James* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1966) p. 542.
- ⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 543.
- ⁸ Ewald Plass. *What Luther Says* (Saint Louis: Concordia Publishing House, 1959) p. 1351.
- ⁹ Ryrie. *Ibid.*, p. 140.
- ¹⁰ Jerry Bridges. *The Pursuit of Holiness* (Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978) p. 68.
- ¹¹ *Ibid.*, p. 78.
- ¹² Luther, *Ibid.*, p. 1349.



MATTHEW 27-28

17 Tell his disciples. 18 Succumb. "Greetings," he said to them, clasped his feet to them. 19 Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brethren in Galilee; there they will meet you."

The Guards' Report

11 While the women were sleeping, some of the guards were awakened and reported to the chief priests that had happened. The chief priests had met with the soldiers and devised a plan. They gave the soldiers a large sum of money. They said, "You are to say, 'This happened during the night and while we were asleep.' If anyone reports this to the governor, we will give you thirty pieces of silver and keep you out of trouble." The soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day.

The Great Commission

16 Then the eleven disciples returned to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. 17 When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. 18 Then Jesus said to them, "All authority has been given to me on earth. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 19 and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you. 20 I am with you always, to the end of the age."

Dealing With Temptation

SOURCES OF TEMPTATION

1. **The World** (I John 2:15-17)
2. **The Flesh** (Galatians 5:16-17)
3. **The Devil** (I Peter 5:8)

HOW TO RESIST TEMPTATION

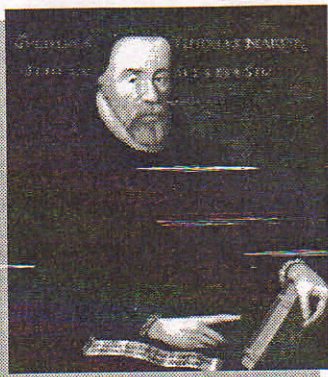
1. **Be on the Alert and Perceptive**
(I Peter 5:8)
2. **Yield to the Spirit's Power**
(Galatians 5:16)
3. **Flee the Situation** (II Timothy 2:22)



HOW TO RESIST TEMPTATION

1. **Temptation is not sin** (Hebrews 4:15)
2. **Temptation has a Purpose** (Galatians 5:16-25)

The Spirit-filled Life



MATTHEW 27-

tell his disciples.

m. "Greetings."

him, clasped his

him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said

afraid. Go and tell m

Am I here they will

Spirit-Filled?

While the women w

one of the guards we

and reported to the chi

thing that had happen

and priests had met wit

advised a plan, they gat

ge sum of money,

you are to say, 'This

during the night and

while we were asleep.'

gets to the governor, we

and keep you out of tr

soldiers took the money

were instructed. And thi

side.

What Is True

Spirituality?

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d

Gabilee, to the mount.

had told them to go. ¹

him, they worshiped

doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus

and said, "All authority

in earth has been giv

ore go and make disc

sions, baptizing them i

the Father and of the

holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach

everything I have comm

and I will be with you al

The question above has become increasingly common in Christian circles and the answer is very important. With such an emphasis on the work of the Spirit in our day, one would think that the doctrine of Spirit-filling would have become well defined. Instead, the doctrine has become more confusing to many Christians because of the wide array of opinions. The problem is that the average Christian's understanding in this area is coming has come more from experience and less from God's revelation on the matter. Increasing numbers of Christians are starting from their personal experience and then going back to Scripture to confirm their experience. It is God's Word that is our authority, not our personal experience. Thus, we must interpret our experience in light of a clear understanding of Scripture. So, let us look into God's Word and see what it says about Spirit-filling. Then we will be able to answer the important question, "Am I Spirit-filled?"



What does it mean to be spiritual? 1 Corinthians 2:15 states, "But he who is spiritual appraises all things, yet he himself is appraised by no man." This is a description of the spiritual man. The Greek word translated "appraise" here is *anakrino* meaning "to examine, used of judicial hearings, to conduct an examination, to examine and judge, to call to account, [or] to discern."¹ The spiritual man is able to examine and judge all things on the basis of God's perfect moral standard but he is not understood by others (a natural man) since the actions and attitudes of the spiritual man "are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them because they are spiritually appraised" (1 Cor. 2:14-15). "If the spiritual believer judges or examines or discerns all things, ...then spirituality means a mature, yet maturing, relationship to God."² Spirituality involves three things: (1) _____, the receiving of new life in Christ which occurs at salvation, (2) being _____ (which we will discuss in this lesson) and (3) _____. "If the spiritual person judges or examines or discerns all things (1 Cor. 2:15), this must involve time in order to gain knowledge and to acquire experience by discerning all things."³

In 1 Cor. 2:14-3:3, we see three different types of men. The _____ man is the unsaved, unregenerate man who is choosing to direct his own life. He is on the throne of his inner life doing as he chooses and determining his own value system (1 Cor. 2:14). The second type of man pictured here is the _____ man (1 Cor. 2:15-16). As we have already discussed, he is able to appraise things accurately since



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "See them." "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The **What Does It Mean To Be Spirit-filled** **the** **some of the guards** **and** **chief priests** **had met** **with** **devised a plan** **they got** **large sum of money** **"You are to say** **"His** **during the night** **and** **while we were asleep** **gets to the governor** **we** **and keep you out of it** **soldiers took the money** **were instructed** **And the** **widely circulated among** **very day**

The Great Commission

16Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go. 17 him, they worshiped doubted. 18Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth I give unto you. 19fore, whatever you bind on earth, I will bind in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth, I will loose in heaven." 20And he said to them, "Go into all the world and preach the Gospel to every creature. 21And he said to them, "I have com-

he has "the mind of Christ." Christ reigns in his life and his attitudes and actions are guided and empowered by the Spirit of God. The third type of man pictured here is the _____ man. He is the Christian who has chosen to run his own life. His ability to appraise and his actions are not clearly discernible from the natural man; i.e. "Are you not walking like mere [natural] men?" (1 Cor. 3:3). The key to developing into a spiritual man is being Spirit-filled.



With so much confusion in our day over what it means to be "Spirit-filled," it is important for us to draw our definition from Scripture and not from experience. How does the Bible define Spirit-filling? In Ephesians 5:18, Paul commanded the Ephesians, "And do not get drunk with wine, for that is dissipation, but be filled with the Spirit." In this verse Paul uses a comparison to drive home his point. Dr. Charles Ryrie explains, "The guideline for proper defining of Spirit-filling is found in Ephesians 5:18.....It is simply the comparison between drunkenness and Spirit-filling. This is not to deny there is a sharp contrast between these two states in the verse, but it is to say that the comparison is what gives us the clue to a proper definition of the filling with the Spirit. And that basic clue is the idea of _____. This is what we see in the comparison, for both the drunk and the spiritual person are controlled people — the one is controlled by the liquor he has consumed, and the other by the Spirit whom he has received. Under the _____ and control of liquor a person acts and thinks in ways that are unnatural to him. Similarly, a Christian who is _____ by the Spirit thinks and acts in ways that are unnatural to him. This is not to imply that his life will be erratic or abnormal, but it is to say that he will not be living a life which is governed by that which is natural to him, that is, his old nature. Thus, to be filled with the Spirit is to be _____ by the Spirit."⁴ We use the word "filled" in the same way today when we say that someone is "filled" with anger or "filled" with passion, etc.



When Should I Be Filled With The Spirit?

From Paul's command to the believers in Ephesus we also can answer the above question. The verb "be filled" is present passive in the Greek text indicating continuous action that was to be coming on the Ephesians. In fact, it is probably what Greek grammarians call a "permissive passive" and thus, could be more accurately translated "be allowing yourselves to be filled with the Holy Spirit." So, we should _____ be allowing ourselves to be filled with or _____ by the Holy Spirit. All of us, at the point of salvation, received the indwelling Holy Spirit (Rom. 5:5; 8:9; 1 Cor. 6:19-20; 2 Cor. 1:22; 1 Thess. 4:8; Eph. 1:13, 4:30; Gal. 3:2), but not all of us are directed and empowered by the Holy Spirit. In other words, we have all of the Holy Spirit, but the Holy Spirit does not always have all of us. The Spirit-filled life is the result of us allowing _____ to live His life through us

in the power of the _____ (Gal. 2:20). It means that we allow the _____ of God to take the _____ of God and make it come alive in our lives as we move in obedience to His directing.



MATTHEW 27-28

How Can I Be Filled With The Spirit?

Again, we deal with a subject in which much confusion has been wrought over the past half century. Much of the confusion has come as a result of the fact that several times early in the book of Acts the _____ of the Spirit and the _____ of the Spirit took place at the same time (cf. Acts 1:5, 11:15-16 and 2:4), but these ministries are clearly distinguishable in the epistles (cf. Eph. 5:18 and 1 Cor. 12:13). Let's look at a comparison of the two verses dealing with these two ministries to see the difference in them. Ephesians 5:18 says, "Be not drunk [which will guide and control you] with wine, for that is dissipation, but be continually allowing yourselves to be filled [guided and controlled] with the Holy Spirit" (Greek text). Then, in 1 Cor. 12:13 Paul stated, "For by one Spirit we were all baptized [the Greek Aorist tense is used which is the past tense indicating finished action] into one body, whether Jews or Greeks, whether slaves or free, and we were all made to drink of one Spirit." So, the baptism of the Holy Spirit deals with our _____ with Christ and His body, whereas the _____ of the Spirit deals with the control of the Holy Spirit in our lives and the power which such control gives us. _____ occurs at the point of salvation when we are united with Christ (Rom. 6:5; 1 Cor. 12:13), whereas _____ can occur many times. Dr. Ryrie gives us a helpful diagram that shows the contrast between the baptism of the Spirit and the filling of the Spirit.

BAPTISM	FILLING
Occurs only once in each believer's life	Is a repeated experience
Never happened before day of Pentecost	Occurred in the Old Testament
True of all believers	Not necessarily experienced by all believers
Cannot be undone	Can be lost
Results in POSITION	Results in POWER
Occurs when we believe in Christ	Occurs throughout the life Christian
No prerequisite (except faith in Christ)	Depends on yieldedness ⁵

We still need to answer the question, "How can I be filled with the Holy Spirit?" Are there conditions that I must meet? In a sense there really are no conditions that we

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely I am with you all the way, to the end of the age." 98 And he said to them, "Greetings," and he clasped his feet and kissed them. 99 Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brethren to go to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

11 "While the women were on their way, some of the guards reported to the chief priests what had happened. So they devised a plan. They gave the women a large sum of money and said, 'You are to say, "His disciples did this during the night and stole the bodies while we were asleep." If the governor asks you, we will bribe you and keep you out of trouble.' So the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews every day.

The Great Commission

16 Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had told them to go to. 17 When they saw him, they worshiped, but some doubted. 18 Then Jesus said to them, "All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. 19 Go therefore and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, 20 and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age."

must meet to be filled with the Holy Spirit, we need simply to yield and obey. If we are walking in obedience to God's Word we are allowing the Spirit to control us. We are also _____ exhorted to pray for the filling of the Holy Spirit. But, "Since the command [of Eph. 5:18] relates to a right relationship to the Holy Spirit, the conditions governing that relationship must have to do with the filling of the Spirit. There are several commands that relate to a believers being filled with the Spirit."⁶ They include:

1. Do not _____ the Holy Spirit (Eph. 4:30).

"The context of Ephesians 4:30 relates to exhortations concerning sin. Believers are warned not to lie (4:25), not to prolong anger (4:26), and not to be bitter or unforgiving (4:31-32). When a believer does these things he _____ the Holy Spirit. Sin grieves the Holy Spirit and sin will prevent the believer from being filled with the Spirit."⁷

2. Do not _____ the Holy Spirit (1 Thess. 5:19).

"The context of this passage relates to ministry. The believer is exhorted to pray without ceasing (5:17), be thankful (5:18), and not to despise prophetic utterances (5:20). When believers pour cold water on the fire of ministry they quench the Spirit. The Spirit's ministry is not to be hindered; Christians also should not hinder others in their ministry for God."⁸ Dr. Walvoord states that quenching "is used here in its metaphorical sense, meaning according to Thayer, 'to suppress, stifle.' ...therefore, quenching in the sense of _____ or opposing His will. Quenching the Spirit may be simply defined as being _____ to Him, or saying, 'No.' The issue is, therefore, the question of willingness to do His will."⁹

3. _____ by the Spirit (Gal. 5:16).

"Walk means to conduct one's life. Rather than living in the sphere or under the domination of the old nature, believers are exhorted to conduct their lives in the sphere of the Holy Spirit."¹⁰

"Other conditions that are sometimes added to the above are: _____ of sin (1 John 1:9) and _____ of the believer to God (Rom. 6:13; 12:1-2). However, it can be argued that these elements are subordinate factors within the three conditions discussed above."¹¹



What Is the Result of My Spirit-filling?

The results of the Spirit-filled life for the Christian is not a problem free life as should be evident by studying the lives of the great saints of the past. On the other hand, a Christlike character is revealed in that our lives will produce the fruit of the Spirit (Gal. 5:22-24) in contrast to the deeds of the flesh (Gal. 5:19-21). A Spirit-filled Christian will also exhibit a life of service (Acts 2:4-41; 4:8-20; 4:31-5:13; etc.). "Additionally, believers will be receptive to the teaching ministry of the Holy Spirit (1 Cor. 2:9-13; John 16:12-15); will exhibit joy, unity, and thankfulness in the assembly (Eph. 5:19-20); will be unified and discerning in ministry (1 Thess. 5:17-22); and will show dedication to God and nonconformity to the world (Rom. 12:1-2)."¹² This is the growing experience of someone controlled by the Spirit. The wonderful Spirit-filled life!



Summary

The spiritual man is able to examine and judge all things on the basis of God's perfect moral standard, but he is not understood by others (a natural man) since the actions and attitudes of the spiritual man "are foolishness to him, and he cannot understand them because they are spiritually appraised" (1 Cor. 2:14-15). Spirituality involves three things: (1) regeneration, the receiving of new life in Christ which occurs at salvation, (2) being Spirit-filled and (3) time. "If the spiritual person judges or examines or discerns all things (1 Cor. 2:15), this must involve time in order to gain knowledge and to acquire experience by discerning all things." Christ reigns in the spiritual man's life and his attitudes and actions are guided and empowered by the Spirit of God. According to Ephesians 5:18, to be filled with the Spirit is to be controlled by the Spirit. The tense and voice of the verb "be filled" indicates that we should continually be allowing ourselves to be filled with or controlled by the Holy Spirit. Baptism of the Holy Spirit deals with our identification with Christ and His body, whereas filling of the Spirit deals with the control of the Holy Spirit in our lives and the power which such control gives us. The baptism occurs at the point of salvation when we are united with Christ (Rom. 6:5), whereas the filling can occur many times. Spirit-filling requires that we yield to the guidance and power of the Holy Spirit and that we do not grieve Him (Eph. 4:30) nor quench Him (1 Thess. 5:19) and that we "walk by the Spirit" (Gal. 5:16) continually. The Spirit-filled life results in a life of great peace, inner joy and Christlikeness, as well as a life of service, dedication to God and nonconformity to the world.



Test Your Knowledge

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell me to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women who some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. "him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "and teach everything that has come

1. Spirituality involves three things: (1) _____, the receiving of new life in Christ which occurs at salvation, (2) being _____ and (3) _____.
2. 1 Cor. 2:14-3:3 pictures three types of men. They include the _____ (unsaved man), the _____ man, and the _____ (carnal) man.
3. To be filled with the Spirit is to be _____ by the Spirit.
4. We should _____ be allowing ourselves to be filled with or _____ by the Holy Spirit.
5. Much of the confusion over Spirit-filling has come as a result of the fact that several times early in the book of Acts the _____ of the Spirit and the _____ of the Spirit took place at the same time.
6. The baptism of the Holy Spirit deals with our _____ with Christ and His body, whereas the _____ of the Spirit deals with the control of the Holy Spirit in our lives and the power which such control gives us.
7. _____ occurs at the point of salvation when we are united with Christ (Rom. 6:5, 1 Cor. 12:13), whereas _____ can occur many times.
8. We are _____ exhorted to pray for the filling of the Holy Spirit.
9. There are several commands that relate to a believers being filled with the Spirit. They include: (1) Do not _____ the Holy Spirit (Eph. 4:30), (2) Do not _____ the Holy Spirit (1 Thess. 5:19) and (3) _____ by the Spirit (Gal. 5:16).
10. Other conditions that are sometimes added to the above (those listed in #9) are: _____ of sin (1 John 1:9) and _____ of the believer to God (Rom. 6:13; 12:1-2).
11. The Spirit-filled life results in a life of great _____ and inner _____. The effects of Spirit-filling are evident in our character as we become more _____.

Suggested Reading

- Ryrie, Charles. *Balancing The Christian Life*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1980.
- Bridges, Jerry. *The Practice of Godliness*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1983.
- Chafer, L. S. *He That Is Spiritual*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1918.
- Walvoord, John F. *The Holy Spirit*. Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1958.

Endnotes

- ¹ Walter Bauer, W. F. Arndt, F. W. Gingrich, and F. W. Danker. *A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament And Other Early Christian Literature* 2 ed. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979) p. 56.
- ² Charles C. Ryrie. *Basic Theology* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1986) p. 375.
- ³ Charles C. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1969) pp.12-13.
- ⁴ *Ibid.*, pp.111-12.
- ⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 113.
- ⁶ L. S. Chafer. *He That Is Spiritual* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1918) pp. 82-172.
- ⁷ Paul Enns. *The Moody Handbook of Theology* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1989) p. 279.
- ⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 279.
- ⁹ John F. Walvoord. *The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1991) pp. 196-97.
- ¹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 279.
- ¹¹ *Ibid.*, p. 279.
- ¹² *Ibid.*, p. 280.



“The Spirit-filled Life”

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples to greet them. “Greetings to you, and the peace of God our Father and the Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Then he bowed and prostrated himself to the ground before them. And they worshiped him, but some doubted. And he commanded them, saying, ‘Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved, and shall have eternal life: but he that believeth not shall be damned.’ And these signs shall follow them that believe: In my name shall they cast out devils, they shall take up serpents, and shall drink deadly venoms, when they shall have drunk, and shall not be hurt at all. These signs shall follow them that believe. Amen.”

Quotes

“The Greek for ‘he that is spiritual’ [I Cor. 2:15] — *pneumatikos* — is found twenty-five times in the New Testament. As related to man, spirituality represents that manner of life which is wrought in (not, by) the unhindered, indwelling Spirit of God (Rom. 8:4).”¹

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

The Guards' Report

“While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met with them and they had devised a plan, they gave us a large sum of money, and they said, ‘You are to say, ‘This during the night and while we were asleep,’ gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble.’ And the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this was widely circulated among the Jews every day.”

The Great Commission

“Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mount which Jesus had told them to go. And when they worshiped him, they worshiped him, but some doubted. And Jesus said unto them, ‘All authority has been given unto me in heaven and in earth: and whatsoever I shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever I shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven: and I will give unto you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven, and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.’”

“Be filled translates the present passive imperative of *pleroo*, and is literally rendered as ‘be being kept filled.’ It is a command that includes the idea of conscious continuation. Being filled with the Holy Spirit is not an option for believers but a mandate. No Christian can fulfill God’s will for his life apart from being filled with the Spirit. If we do not obey this command, we cannot obey any other — simply because we cannot do any of God’s will apart from God’s Spirit.”²

JOHN MACARTHUR JR.

“An important contribution to the doctrine of the filling of the Spirit is the tense of the verb in the command to be filled (Eph. 5:18). The verb *plerousthe* is found in the present imperative. The present tense indicates a durative idea, and could be translated, ‘keep being filled.’”³

JOHN F. WALVOORD

“A study of 1 Corinthians reveals that the word baptize — *ebaptisthemen* — is found in the aorist, an action which takes place once and for all. In contrast to this, there is the continuous ministry of the Holy Spirit in filling.”⁴

JOHN F. WALVOORD

“Finally, the filling of the Spirit is not the same as being sealed, or secured, by Him. That is an accomplished fact (Eph. 1:13). Nowhere are believers commanded or exhorted to be indwelt, baptized, or sealed by the Holy Spirit. The only command is to be filled.”⁵

JOHN MACARTHUR JR.

“What is termed the baptism of the Spirit — not, in or unto the Spirit — is His mighty undertaking by which He joins the individual believer to Christ’s Body and thus to Christ Himself as the Head of the Body.”⁶

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

"A powerful motivation for putting off unwholesome talk is that not to do so will grieve the Holy Spirit of God. All sin is painful to God, but sin in His children breaks His heart. When His children refuse to change the ways of the old life for the ways of the new, God grieves. The Holy Spirit of God weeps, as it were, when he sees Christians lying instead of speaking the truth, becoming unrighteously rather than righteously angry, stealing instead of sharing, and speaking corrupt instead of uplifting and gracious words."

JOHN MACARTHUR JR.

"If you desire to attain true holiness which avails before God, you must utterly despair of yourself and rely on God alone; you must surrender yourself entirely to Christ and must accept Him in such a way that everything He has is yours and that what you have is His. For so you begin to burn with love divine and become an entirely different person, born completely anew. Your inner being will then be entirely changed."⁸

MARTIN LUTHER

"The children of this world are accustomed to indulge in deep drinking as an excitement to mirth. Such carnal excitement is contrasted with the holy joy of which the Spirit effects. To what does drunkenness lead? To unbounded licentiousness, — to unbridled, indecent merriment. And to what does spiritual joy lead, when it is most strongly excited? To psalms, and hymns, and spiritual songs."⁹

JOHN CALVIN

Quotes

- ¹ L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. 7* (Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1948) p. 292.
- ² John MacArthur Jr. *The MacArthur New Testament Commentary - Ephesians* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1986) p. 248.
- ³ John F. Walvoord. *The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1991) p. 194.
- ⁴ *Ibid.*, pp. 194-95.
- ⁵ MacArthur. *Ibid.*, p. 248.
- ⁶ Chafer. *Ibid.*, p. 33.
- ⁷ MacArthur. *Ibid.*, p. 189.
- ⁸ Ewald Plass. *What Luther Says* (Saint Louis: Concordia Publishing House, 1959) p. 657.
- ⁹ John Calvin. *Calvin's Commentaries Vol. XXI* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 315.



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Suddenly he came to them. "Greetings," he said to them, and he clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me, just as I said to them."

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were going to buy spices, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met with the guards and devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money, saying, "You are to say, 'His disciples came during the night and while we were asleep, they opened the tomb and took away the body.' If the governor gets to hear of this, we will keep you out of prison. If the soldiers take the money, we will be responsible. And this story will be widely circulated among the people every day."

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. When they met him, they worshiped him, but some doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age."



Obedience

MATTHEW 27-

All his disciples...
"Greetings,"
him, clasped his
10 Then Jesus said...

**Can't I Live
The Way I
Want To?**

While the women were
reported to the chi
ng that had happen
priests had met wit
vised a plan, they ga
sum of money,
ou are to say, 'His
ring the night and
while we were asleep.'
is to the governor, we
d keep you out of tr
ddiers took the money
ere instructed. And thi

**What Is
Obedience?**

The Great Commission
16 Then the eleven d
Galilee, to the mount
had told them to go. I
him, they worshiped
doubted. 18 Then Jesus
and said, "All authority
on earth has been giv
ore go and make disc
ions, baptizing them i
the Father and of the
Holy Spirit, 20 and teach
everything I have comm
only I am with you al

I became a Christian when I was twelve years old but for many years I chose to live my life as a carnal Christian. I wanted Jesus Christ as my Savior but not as my Lord. It didn't take me too long to make a wreck of my life. Thankfully, my Lord loves me so much that He was waiting with open arms when I decided to turn the reins of my life over to Him and follow Him through an obedient lifestyle. It took some pain and hurt in my life to decide that He could run my life better than I could and that He had my eternal interests in mind. What a joy life is now, as I seek to follow Him obediently in every area of life. No, I have not "arrived" and I am still learning, but I know that I would be missing out on so much if I was still walking in disobedience. Obedience is my avenue to blessing and the center of God's will and that is where I want my family and me to be. That is also where God wants all of us to be!



I John 2:3-4 states, "And by this we know that we have come to know Him, if we [obey] His commandments. The one who says, 'I have come to know Him,' and does not [obey] His commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him." The Greek verb translated "keep" here is *tereo* which denotes "to watch over, preserve, keep, [or] watch."¹ The idea of obedience also involves being "_____ to the restraint or command of authority."² In our case that authority is our Lord Jesus Christ. Our obedience as God's children should flow from our deep love for our Heavenly Father. John states later in his epistle, "For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments; and His commandments are not burdensome" (1 John 5:3). Obedience in the Christian life deals with more than _____ observance of a set of rules. Outward observance of a set of religious rules is _____. Christian obedience deals not only with outward conformity but also, just as importantly, with _____ heart submission to God's Word.



Why Should We Obey? -28

to tell his disciples. "Such greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell the message in all the world.' Then they went to Galilee, there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met and devised a plan, they got a large sum of money, 'You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And the widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go to him, they worshiped and doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to you, go and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Holy Spirit, and teach them to obey everything I have commanded you. Amen."

It is not hard to come up with a multitude of reasons for our obedience to God. The first thing that comes to mind is the incredible love that He has shown to us. The fact of the matter is that before we became Christians we were in a _____ situation. The Bible says that we were "*dead in our trespasses and sins and by nature children of wrath*" (Eph. 2:1-3). We had no _____ of eternal life and to be very blunt, we were doomed to _____ punishment in the lake of fire (Rev. 20:15). That would be our end had it not been for God's sovereign choice of us by His grace whereby He redeemed and forgave us (Eph. 1:4-8a). The outflow of our love toward God for these acts alone should be a compelling desire to obey Him in all that He asks us to do. In fact, as we saw in 1 John 5:3, the observance of God's commands is evidence of our love for Him.

We should also obey God because it _____ to obey Him. The God that we serve is a God of infinite wisdom and love. Now that we have become "sons of God" and are part of His family He desires the _____ for us. It is for this reason that He has given us instructions for a life of godliness and holiness in His Word. Far from being restrictions to our freedom, in actuality God's commands are rules that _____ to freedom!

Another reason for obeying God is the fact that He has _____ it. We must lead a life of obedience to live a life of holiness, and Peter writes, "*but like the Holy One who called you, be holy yourselves also in all your behavior; because it is written, 'YOU SHALL BE HOLY, FOR I AM HOLY'*" (1 Peter 1:15-16). A life of holiness is the result of a life of _____. James told the recipients of his letter, "*But prove yourselves doers of the word, and not merely hearers who delude themselves*" (James 1:22). God's desire for us is no less than what His desire for the Israelites were, "*And now, Israel, what does the LORD your God require from you, but to fear the LORD your God, to walk in all His ways and love Him, and to serve the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, and to keep the LORD'S commandments and His statutes which I am commanding you today for your good?*" (Deut. 10:12-13).

A final reason of obeying our Father is the fact that some day we will be held _____ for the way we lived our lives here on earth. Dr. J. I. Packer states, "The gift of justification [being declared righteous before God] does not at all shield believers from being _____ as Christians, and from forfeiting good which others will enjoy if it turns out that as Christians they have been slack, mischievous and destructive."³ This "assessment" is what theologians refer to as "the _____ of Christ" and is mentioned in passages such as 2 Cor. 5:10 and 1 Cor. 3:10-15. These passages reveal that we will appear before the righteous Lord for evaluation of our deeds whether they were "good or bad" (2 Cor. 5:10). Our inner character and the motivation of our hearts will be revealed. Dr. Dwight Pentecost comments on 1 Cor. 3:10-15, "The apostle is revealing the fact that the examination at the bema [judgment seat] of Christ is to determine that which was done by God through the individual and that which the individual did in his _____ strength; that which was done for the glory of _____ and that which

was done for the glory of the _____." ⁴ Thus, the fact that we will face an assessment of our works at the end of our life should be a motivation for obedience.



Gary Kuhne in his excellent book on personal follow-up lists the following steps towards walking in obedience.

1. _____ God's Commands (2 Tim. 3:16-17).
2. _____ on God's Power To Obey (Phil. 4:13, Acts 1:8).
3. _____ the Right Attitudes.
 - a. Delight to do God's will (Ps. 40:8).
 - b. Do it carefully (Deut. 26:16).
 - c. Be sincere (Lk. 8:15).
4. _____ to deal with temptations (I Cor. 10:13). ⁵

(1) KNOW GOD'S COMMANDS (2 TIM. 3:16-17).

It is very difficult to be obedient to God's _____ if we are not sure what they are. That's why regular Bible study is so important. By this time in our study you will have covered *PERSONAL BIBLE STUDY AND SCRIPTURE MEMORIZATION*. By now you should have started to study God's Word daily and should be learning what God's desire is for your attitudes and actions. We should be reminded of a verse that we studied before. It is found in Paul's second letter to Timothy, verses 16-17. It reads, "*All Scripture is inspired by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for training in righteousness; that the man of God may be adequate, equipped for every good work.*" Studying what God's perspective is from His Word will _____ us to walk in obedience. Again, is it difficult to be obedient if we are not sure what it is God requires of us.

(2) DRAW ON GOD'S POWER TO OBEY (PHIL. 4:13, ACTS 1:8).

In studying *DEALING WITH TEMPTATION*, we learned that our _____ to live the Christian life comes from yielding to the indwelling Holy Spirit. When we become Christians we are given a new nature, a new desire for doing good. But that nature can only live out its desire to do good if it is _____ by the Holy Spirit. We need a caution here though. Yielding to the Spirit is not simply "letting go and letting God." Romans 8:13 states, "*for if you are living according to the flesh, you must die; but if by the Spirit you are putting to death the deeds of the body, you will live.*" Jerry Bridges comments on this verse, "Though it is the Spirit who _____ us to put to death our corruptions, yet Paul says this is _____ action as well. The very same work is from one point of view the work of the Spirit, and from another the

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women who some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happen chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it; soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. "him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, and teach you to obey; I have com-

work of man. ...It is clear from the passage that God puts _____ for living a holy life squarely on us. We are to do something. We are not to 'stop trying and start trusting'; we are to put to death the deeds of the flesh. Over and over again in the epistles — not only Paul's, but the other apostles' as well — we are commanded to assume our _____ for a holy walk. Paul exhorted, 'Put to death, therefore, whatever belongs to your earthly nature' (Colossians 3:5). This is something we are told to do."⁶ It is a joint effort as we make a volitional choice to resist temptation and at the same time depend on the power of the Holy Spirit to empower us to do so.

(3) HAVE THE RIGHT ATTITUDES.

a. Delight to do God's will (Ps. 40:8).

As we stated before, Christian obedience deals not only with outward conformity but also, just as importantly, with inward heart submission to God's Word. Psalm 40:8 reads as follows, "*I delight to do Thy will, O my God; Thy Law is within my heart.*"

b. Do it carefully (Deut. 26:16).

Deuteronomy 26:16 states, "*This day the LORD your God commands you to do these statutes and ordinances. You shall therefore be careful to do them with all your heart and with all your soul.*" This was Moses' statement after he told the children of Israel all that God required of them. These were people that were still under the Law. How much more should we be careful to observe Christ's commands now that we walk in grace.

c. Be sincere (Lk. 8:15).

In Christ's parable of the sower in Luke chapter 8, He tells of the Word of God being planted in three types of soil. One type of soil is called "good soil." Verse 15 states, "*And the seed in the good soil, these are the ones who have heard the word in an honest and good heart, and hold it fast, and bear fruit with perseverance.*" "God doesn't want only lip service, but rather he desires our _____ obedience. Strive to be honest and _____ in your obedience to God's will."⁷

(4) Learn to deal with temptations (I Cor. 10:13).

Let's be reminded of what we have already learned about in dealing with temptation. Temptation is not sin but it can easily lead to sin unless we take action to prevent it. Some actions we need to take in dealing with temptation include: (1) being on the _____ and perceptive, (2) realizing where our _____ is to

overcome temptation, (3) in some cases _____ or (4) in other cases _____ the object of temptation or _____ less time in the relationship that causes the temptation. We have been given the resources for victory if we will only choose to walk in obedience to God's law and dependence on His Spirit!

As Christians we have been given all we need to live a consistently obedient life. "God's provision for us consists in delivering us from the reign of sin, uniting us with Christ, and giving us the indwelling Holy Spirit to reveal sin, to create a desire for holiness, and to strengthen us..."⁸ To live an obedient life then, we must accept our responsibility and appropriate God's provision for a life of holiness.



Summary

The idea of obedience involves being "submissive to the restraint or command of authority". In our case that authority is our Lord Jesus Christ. Obedience in the Christian life deals with more than outward observance of a set of rules. Outward observance of a set of religious rules is legalism. Christian obedience deals not only with outward conformity but also, just as importantly, with inward heart submission to God's Word. It is not hard to come up with a multitude of reasons for our obedience to God. The first thing that comes to mind is the incredible love that He has shown to us. We should also obey God because it makes sense to obey Him. Another reason for obeying God is the fact that He has commanded it. A final reason for obeying our Father is the fact that some day we will be held accountable for the way we lived our lives here on earth. The following are steps towards walking in obedience: (1) knowing God's commands (2 Tim. 3:16-17), (2) drawing on God's power to obey (Phil. 4:13, Acts 1:8), (3) having the right attitudes (Ps. 40:8; Deut. 26:16; Lk. 8:15) and (4) learning to deal with temptations (I Cor. 10:13). To live an obedient life then, we must accept our responsibility and appropriate God's provision for a life of holiness.



Test Your Knowledge

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹And them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women with some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money, "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. ¹⁷And him, they worshiped and doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ¹⁹and teach everything I have commanded you to do.

1. The idea of obedience involves being "_____ to the restraint or command of authority."
2. Christian obedience deals not only with outward conformity but also, just as importantly, with _____ heart submission to God's Word.
3. The outflow of our love toward God for _____ and _____ us, thus, saving us from eternal punishment should be a compelling desire to obey Him in all that He asks us to do.
4. We should obey God because it _____ to obey Him.
5. Another reason for obeying God is the fact that He has _____ it.
6. A final reason of obeying our Father is the fact that some day we will be held _____ for the way we lived our lives here on earth.
7. It is very difficult to be obedient to God's _____ if we are not sure what they are.
8. "Though it is the Spirit who _____ us to put to death our corruptions, yet Paul says this is _____ action as well."
9. "God doesn't want only lip service, but rather he desires our _____ obedience. [We should] strive to be honest and _____ in our obedience to God's will."
10. Some actions we need to take in dealing with temptation include: (1) being on the _____ and perceptive, (2) realizing where our _____ is to overcome temptation, (3) in some cases _____ or (4) in other cases _____ the object of temptation or _____ less time in the relationship that causes the temptation.

Suggested Reading

Bridges, Jerry. *The Pursuit of Holiness*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978.

Packer, J. I. *Knowing God*. Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press, 1973.

Bridges, Jerry. *The Practice of Godliness*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1983.

Ryrie, Charles C. *Balancing The Christian Life*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1969.

Endnotes

- ¹ W.E. Vine, Merrill F. Unger and William White, Jr. eds. *Vine's Expository Dictionary of Biblical Words* (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1985) p. 340.
- ² *Webster's New Collegiate Dictionary* (Springfield: G. & C. Merriam Co., 1980) p. 784.
- ³ J. I. Packer. *Knowing God* (Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press, 1973) p. 132.
- ⁴ J. Dwight Pentecost. *Things To Come* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1958) p. 224.
- ⁵ Gary W. Kuhne. *The Dynamics of Personal Follow-up* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1976) pp.179-81.
- ⁶ Jerry Bridges. *The Pursuit of Holiness* (Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978) pp. 81-82.
- ⁷ Kuhne., *Ibid.*, p. 180.
- ⁸ Bridges., *Ibid.*, p. 81.



“Obedience”

“Keeping of the commandments of God is an evidence of love to God; this shews that love is not in word and tongue, in profession only, but in deed and in truth; and that such persons have a sense of the love of God upon their souls, under the influence of which they act; and such shall have, and may expect to have, greater manifestations of the love of God unto them.”¹

JOHN GILL

“We see how Paul groaned as one held captive, and exclaimed that he was wretched, because he could not fully serve God. My reply to this is, that the law is said to be easy, as far as we are endued with heavenly power, and overcome the lusts of the flesh. For however the flesh may resist, yet the faithful find that there is no real enjoyment except in following God.”²

JOHN CALVIN

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely I am with you all the way, to the end of the age." Then he said to them, "Greetings." He bowed and prostrated himself before them, and they worshiped him. Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me, just as I said to them."

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to buy spices, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had met with the chief priests and they had devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money. 'You are to say, "This happened while we were asleep,"' they said to them. 'When you get to the governor, we will keep you out of trouble.' The soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. When they saw him, they worshiped him, but some doubted. Then Jesus said to them, "All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything that I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age."

"No longer are we to conduct ourselves, or fashion our behavior as we once did when, in the days of our blindness and ignorance, we were under the domination of carnal desires. Like the Israelite about whose garments was to run a fringe of blue, the reminder that he was linked up with the God of heaven, and upon which he was to look and remember that he was called to exhibit the heavenly character, for God had said, 'Be ye holy; for I am holy,' so we, too, are to manifest holiness in all our words and ways as becomes a heavenly people passing through a world of sin."³

H. A. IRONSIDE

"Much Scripture sustains the truth that rewards are to be given to faithful believers for their service while in this world (1 Cor. 3:12-15; 9:16-27; 2 Cor. 5:9-11; Rev. 3:11; 22:12). These rewards are to be bestowed by Christ from His judgment seat in heaven and after the believer has been received into heaven."⁴

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFE

"The Scripture is thus absolutely incomparable; no other book, library, or anything else in the world is able to make a lost sinner wise to salvation; no other Scripture, since it lacks inspiration of God whatever profit it may be otherwise afford, it profitable for these ends: teaching us the true saving facts — refuting the lies and the delusions that deny these facts — restoring the sinner or fallen Christian to an upright position — educating, training, disciplining one in genuine righteousness. The character of the source (God-inspired) is matched by the profit produced; the profit attests the character of the source."⁵

C. H. LENSKI

"[Paul states, 'I can do all things,...but it is in Christ, not by my own power, for it is Christ that supplies me with strength.' Hence we infer, that Christ will not be less strong and invincible in us also, if, conscious of our own weakness, we place reliance upon his power alone. When he says all things, means merely those things which belong to his calling."⁶

JOHN CALVIN

"Moses also exhorted the people — as he often did in the speech preceding this declaration — to be careful to observe (i.e. to rigorously keep) the stipulations, not only formally, and certainly no grudgingly, but with a total commitment of themselves — with all their 'heart' and 'soul' (commenting on Deut. 26:16)."⁷

EARL S. KALLAND

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

...telling his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers in Galilee; there they will meet you, and they will go with you to Jerusalem, and you will see the Son of Man sitting at the right hand of the Father.'"

The Guards' Report

...While the women were going to buy spices, one of the guards who had reported to the chief priests what had happened while they were sleeping had met with the chief priests and had devised a plan. They gave him a large sum of money, and he was to say, 'His disciples came during the night and stole the body while we were asleep.' So he went to the governor and said, 'Keep you out of trouble, for the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story has widely circulated among the Jews every day.'

The Great Commission

...Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had told them to go. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. "Then Jesus said to them, 'All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always to the end of the age.'"

"The seed is the same in each instance. It is the attitude of the hearer that is different. Some are utterly careless, others effervescent and easily moved, but vacillating. Others again are in earnest to begin with, but allow other interests to crowd out spiritual things. Then there are those who are seeking to know God and are ready to receive His Word when it is presented to them. These bear fruit to perfection, and so glorify the Father. If there be no fruit, profession is a mere sham, as the after-experience will soon make manifest (commenting on Lk. 8:15)."⁸

H. A. IRONSIDE

"An important point in this aspect of the truth is that guidance is given especially to those who are already walking in the will of God. According to Romans 12:1-2, surrender to God is necessary, 'that ye may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God'.⁹"

JOHN F. WALVOORD

Quotes

- ¹ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 9* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 652).
- ² John Calvin. *I John in Calvin's Commentaries Vol. XXII* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) pp. 253-54.
- ³ Henry A. Ironside. *James in Hebrew - James - Peter* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1982) p. 20.
- ⁴ Charles Hodge. *Systematic Theology Vol. III* (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans, 1977) p.150.
- ⁵ R. C. H. Lenski. *The Interpretation of St. Paul's Epistles to the Colossians, to the Thessalonians, to Timothy, to Titus and to Philemon* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1961) p. 841..
- ⁶ John Calvin. *Philippians in Calvin's Commentaries Vol. XXII* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 125.
- ⁷ Earl S. Kalland. *Deuteronomy in The Expositor's Bible Commentary Vol. 3 gen. ed. Frank E. Gaebelein* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1992) p. 158.
- ⁸ Henry A. Ironside. *Luke* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1982) pp. 246-47..
- ⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 221.



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Sue them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of tr soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authorit on earth has been givet fore go and make disci tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have comm



God's Discipline

When I was around ten years old my dad came home from work one day with a large roll of linoleum flooring. He is a carpenter and many times he would bring home things from work that had been taken out of houses and buildings he was remodeling. The flooring was destined for our kitchen floor and so he took great care unloading it and laying it on the front porch. If you have ever seen the old thin type of linoleum flooring you know that sometimes it can tear or break if you are not careful. After placing it gingerly on the porch he told all of us children not to touch it and entered the house. For some reason it looked to me like it would be awfully fun to run along the top of the roll and so I started to contemplate it in my mind. That evening as my brother and I were running and playing in the front yard I took a detour up on the porch and ran the length of the rolled linoleum. I had just finished my rebellious run when I heard the front door open behind me. You guessed it, my dad had been watching us play out the window and had seen everything. He "invited" me into the bathroom for a brief talk and firm "spanking". I had been openly rebellious against my father's rule and the result was swift retribution. I know now that my dad's chastening of me was because he loved me too much to let me grow up with such a rebellious attitude and I am very thankful for his wise exercise of discipline (Prov. 13:24). It was part of his overall training of me.



The classic text on God's discipline is found in the book of Hebrews (12:4 -11). The text states:

"4 You have not yet resisted to the point of shedding blood in your striving against sin; 5 and you have forgotten the exhortation which is addressed to you as sons, MY SONS, DO NOT REGARD LIGHTLY THE DISCIPLINE OF THE LORD, NOR FAINT WHEN YOU ARE REPROVED BY HIM; 6 FOR THOSE WHOM THE LORD LOVES HE DISCIPLINES, AND HE SCOURGES EVERY SON WHOM HE RECEIVES." 7 It is for discipline that you endure; God deals with you as with sons; for what son is there whom his father does not discipline? 8 But if you are without discipline, of which all have become partakers, then you are illegitimate children and not sons. 9



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women and some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷And him, they worshiped, doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰Whichever

Furthermore, we had earthly fathers to discipline us, and we respected them; shall we not much rather be subject to the Father of spirits, and live? ¹⁰For they disciplined us for a short time as seemed best to them, but He disciplines us for our good, that we may share in His holiness. ¹¹ All discipline for the moment seems not to be joyful, but sorrowful; yet to those who have been trained by it, afterwards it yields the peaceful fruit of righteousness."

It is uncertain who the exact recipients were of the letter to the Hebrews, but we do know that they were of Jewish background and that they had in the past experienced severe persecution (10:32). We also know that they were again suffering persecution (12:4; more likely "striving against sinful people"), yet they had not been called on to suffer to the point of giving up their lives (12:4). Before the author discusses the Lord's discipline, he points out the example of many Old Testament saints that had walked by faith through suffering (Heb. 11) and also Jesus Christ (12:1-3), who was the preeminent example of faith in the midst of suffering. He then takes this opportunity to explain the Lord's discipline and give us the most complete explanation of this subject in the New Testament.

The author starts his explanation by quoting the Septuagint (Greek translation of the Hebrew Old Testament) version of Proverbs 3:11-12 (Heb. 12:5-6). The Christians were encouraged not to "regard lightly" (Gk. *oligoreo* - to make light of, to _____¹) the benefit of the Lord's discipline. The Greek noun translated "discipline" here is the word *paideia* which "was used in the Greek world to denote the _____ and handling of a minor child, and included such aspects as direction, teaching, and _____." ² Thus, "the Lord's discipline refers to that instructive and correctional training that the Lord administers."³ Fritz Rienecker describes the Hebrew view of discipline, "In Judaism a father was required to provide for the instruction of his sons and daughters and to teach them good behavior. _____ was accepted, along with other disciplinary measures."⁴

When we speak of the Lord's discipline we are speaking of more than what we would call "chastisement" or "_____ " although certainly this is included in the overall idea of *paideia*, and especially in our passage as is obvious from the use of the Greek word *mastigoi* translated "scourging" in Hebrews 12:6 and meaning "to _____ with a whip."⁵ Since we have already dealt with the instruction side of discipline in several of other chapters (*PERSONAL BIBLE STUDY, SCRIPTURE MEMORIZATION, etc.*), in this chapter we will concentrate more on the _____ of believers. As Homer Kent writes, "The point is that proper training must include _____ of faulty behavior."⁶ This idea is very much in line with the Old Testament idea of discipline with the emphasis on chastisement (Deut. 21:18; Prov. 13:24; 19:18; 23:13; 29:17). So the overall idea that we see here is that the suffering of the Hebrews was sovereignty allowed by God and was used in their training process. Homer Kent states, "In times of affliction caused by opponents to their faith, God's people are to realize that _____ is actually overruled by God and used for the training of believers."⁷ The bottom line idea here

is that suffering brings _____; whether it be correction for a wrong, suffering unjustly or everyday struggles; it all fits into God's training program for His sons (Rom. 8:28).



Hebrews 12:5-6 states, "MY SONS, DO NOT REGARD LIGHTLY THE DISCIPLINE OF THE LORD, NOR FAINT WHEN YOU ARE REPROVED BY HIM; 6 FOR THOSE WHOM THE LORD LOVES HE DISCIPLINES, AND HE SCOURGES EVERY SON WHOM HE RECEIVES." The motivation for the Lord's action in discipline is _____. As we have discussed before, at the point of salvation we became "sons of God" (Rom. 8:14-15; Gal. 3:26; 4:5-7) and were placed in God's family (1 Cor. 12:13). Because we are sons of God, God is committed to train us to be _____ sons. The writer reveals here that the very fact that they are experiencing chastisement is _____ that they are God's sons. It is those who do not experience God's chastisement who are "illegitimate." In fact, we should endure in the face of persecution and suffering realizing God is in _____ control and is using it for our instruction. As F. F. Bruce states, "A father would spend much care and patience on the upbringing of a true-born son whom he hoped to make a worthy heir; and at the time such a son might have to undergo much more irksome discipline than an illegitimate child for whom no future of honor and responsibility was envisaged..."⁸ [Heb. 12:7-9]. The key to growing through chastisement, suffering and everyday trials is in being in "_____" (vs. 9). The Greek verb here is *hypotassomai* meaning "to be in submission or subjection" or "to submit oneself to another." In this case that "other" is our Heavenly Father. This can mean not running from difficult situations and also reacting to times of chastisement and suffering with a _____ toward God knowing He is in control.

Before the foundation of the world God set His love on us and chose us to be His (Eph. 1:4-5) and is committed to conforming us to the image of His son (Rom. 8:29). His training process will bring us to that point some day and it is all motivated by His incredible love for us (Heb. 12:6).

What Is The Result Of Our Discipline?



Continuing the comparison between our earthly fathers and our Heavenly Father ["the Father of spirits" (vs. 9)], the writer points out the fact that our earthly fathers' discipline was "for a short time." This "short time" would have been from birth until adulthood. In contrast, God's discipline of us is for a _____. In the case of our earthly fathers, they were limited in their knowledge of what we needed to grow up to be morally and ethically responsible adults. Since they were imperfect themselves, they could not give us perfect discipline. "Our Heavenly Father, in

MATTHEW 27-28

Why Does God Discipline Me? Report

...all his disciples. "Suc
...m. "Greetings," he s
...him, clasped his feet
...Then Jesus said to
...they will
...While the women w
...one of the guards we
...d reported to the chi
...ng that had happen
...dief priests had met wit
...vised a plan, they gai
...ge sum of money.
...you are to say, 'His
...uring the night and
...hile we were asleep.'
...y to the governor, we
...d keep you out of tr
...soldiers took the money
...ere instructed. And thi
...sely circulated among
...ry day.

The Great Commission

...Then the eleven d
...Galilee, to the mount
...d told them to go
...him, they worshiped
...doubted. Then Jesus
...ad said, "All authorit
...earth has been giv
...re go and make disc
...ions, baptizing them i
...the Father and of the
...oly

What Is The Result Of Our Discipline?

...erly fathers'

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So they. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards were and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they gave large sum of money.

"You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets and keep you out of the soldiers money were instructed. And the wide Chastisement? very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given for go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach

the _____ of His wisdom and love, can be relied upon never to impose any discipline on us that is not for our good. The supreme good that He has in view for His children is this, that they may share His _____." ⁹ This is not referring to the positional holiness that we receive at salvation on the basis of which we can be referred to as saints (Rom. 1:7; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Cor. 1:1; Eph. 1:1, etc.), but rather the writer here is referring to the holiness "which is the goal for which God is preparing His people — that entire _____ which is consummated in their manifestation with Christ in glory."¹⁰

Chastisement is never _____. In fact, in most instances the pain of chastisement seems extremely unpleasant and sorrowful (Heb. 12:11). Those who have endured chastisement with a submissive attitude, looking for God's instruction in the circumstances are _____ by it (Gr. *gumnazo* - meaning "to exercise or train" and the perfect tense indicates completed action). The result is spiritual _____. The training results in the "peaceful fruit of righteousness." This is probably the inner peace of knowing that all is right between God and us.



Lewis Sperry Chafer names four general divisions:

1. "_____". Only one example of preventative chastisement has been recorded in the Sacred Text, but such could easily be the experience of any child of God should circumstances demand. Having been caught up into the third heaven, the Apostle Paul was enjoined that he should not tell here on the earth what he had seen and heard, and accordingly, lest he should transgress, a thorn was given him in the flesh. Though thrice he besought the Lord for its removal, the situation (2 Cor. 12:7-9) was not relieved. This becomes a preventative chastisement.
2. _____. [This type of chastisement deals with the] Father's correction of His erring child. Both chastisement and scourging are indicated in Hebrews 12:6....The universality of both chastisement and scourging may be explained on the ground of the Father's unwillingness to allow any exceptions among those who deserve to be disciplined.....No anarchy or rebellion can be tolerated in the Father's household. The surrender of one's life to God is both reasonable and required (Rom. 12:1-2). Yielding to God may be accomplished easily if all resistance is avoided, or be made difficult and painful when long conflict is maintained.
3. _____. The object of chastisement is said to be 'unto holiness.' So, also, the 'fruit of righteousness' becomes the portion of those who are exercised thereby. Christ's words recorded in John 15:2 indicate

how discipline may be applied from God to the end that the believer may be more fruitful. He declares: 'Every branch that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.' This does not suggest the correction of willful evil; it is all done that more fruit may be borne to the glory of God. It is designed so that a good man may become a better man.

4. _____. Again, but one illustration is found in the Bible of this specific form of chastisement. To Job it was given to demonstrate against the challenge of Satan that he loved God apart from all personal benefits or advantages which He had bestowed. No evil had been recorded against Job till then. In truth, Jehovah three times describes Job as 'a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil.' (Job 1:1, 8; 2:3). But Satan in converse with Jehovah declared that Job served Jehovah only for selfish motives and that Jehovah was not really loved for His own worthiness. Though Job knew nothing of the issue which had arisen in heaven over him, he nevertheless vindicated Jehovah in three successive tests....loss of property and family, ...loss of health and wifely comfort,.....[the possibility of loss of life]."¹¹

Although God's discipline is not always joyous at the time, we can be confident that it is an expression of His love and commitment as our Heavenly Father to bring us to the point of sharing in His holiness (Heb. 12:10).



Summary

The classic text on God's discipline is found in the book of Hebrews (12:4-11). The Greek noun translated "discipline" here is the word *paideia* which "was used in the Greek world to denote the upbringing and handling of a minor child, and included such aspects as direction, teaching, and chastisement." Thus, "the Lord's discipline refers to that instructive and correctional training that the Lord administers." So, when we speak of the Lord's discipline we are speaking of more than what we would call "chastisement" or "spanking" although certainly this is included in the overall idea of *paideia*, and especially in our passage as is obvious from the use of the Greek word *mastigoi* translated "scourging" in Hebrews 12:6 and meaning "to beat with a whip." This idea is very much in line with the Old Testament idea of discipline with the emphasis on chastisement (Deut. 21:18; Prov. 13:24; 19:18; 23:13; 29:17). The motivation for the Lord's action in discipline is love. The writer of the book of Hebrews reveals in 12:7-8, the very fact that we experience chastisement is proof that we are God's sons. It is those who do not experience

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will meet you.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were on their way, some of the guards reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan, they gave the women a large sum of money, and they said, 'You are to say, "His master said this during the night and we were asleep," while we were out there, and keep you out of it.' So the soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. There they worshiped him, but they doubted. Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Now I am sending you out to make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age."

God's chastisement who are "illegitimate." In fact, we should endure in the face of persecution and suffering realizing God is in total control and is using it for our instruction.

The key to growing through chastisement, suffering and everyday trials is in being in "subjection" (Heb. 12:7). The Greek verb here is *hypotassomai* meaning "to be in submission or subjection" or "to submit oneself to another". In this case that "other" is our Heavenly Father. This can mean not running from difficult situations and also, reacting to times of chastisement and suffering with a submissive attitude toward God knowing He is in control.

"Our Heavenly Father, in the perfection of His wisdom and love, can be relied upon never to impose any discipline on us that is not for our good. The supreme good that He has in view for His children is this, that they may share His holiness." This is not referring to the positional holiness that we receive at salvation on the basis of which we can be referred to as saints (Rom. 1:7; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Cor. 1:1; Eph. 1:1, etc.); the writer here is referring to the holiness "which is the goal for which God is preparing His people — that entire sanctification which is consummated in their manifestation with Christ in glory."

Lewis Sperry Chafer names four general divisions of chastisement including (1) preventative, (2) corrective, (3) enlarging and (4) vindicative.



Test Your Knowledge

1. The Hebrew Christians were encouraged not to "regard lightly" (Gk. *oligoreo* - to make light of, to _____) the benefit of the Lord's discipline.
2. The Greek noun translated "discipline" here is the word *paideia* which "was used in the Greek world to denote the _____ and handling of a minor child, and included such aspects as direction, teaching, and _____."
3. When we speak of the Lord's discipline we are speaking of more than what we would call "chastisement" or "_____," although certainly this is included in the overall idea of *paideia*, and especially in our passage as is obvious from the use of the Greek word *mastigoi* translated "scourging" in Hebrews 12:6 and meaning "to _____ with a whip."
4. Homer Kent writes, "The point [of Hebrews 12:5-6] is that proper training must include _____ of faulty behavior."

5. The motivation for the Lord's action in discipline is _____.
6. The writer reveals here that the very fact that they are experiencing chastisement is _____ that they are God's sons.
7. The key to growing through chastisement, suffering and everyday trials is in being in " _____ " (Heb. 12:7).
8. "Our Heavenly Father, in the _____ of His wisdom and love, can be relied upon never to impose any discipline on us that is not for our good. The supreme good that He has in view for His children is this, that they may share His _____."
9. Those who have endured chastisement with a submissive attitude, looking for God's instruction in the circumstances are _____ by it (Gr. *gumnazo* - meaning "to exercise or train" and the perfect tense indicates completed action).
9. The result of enduring chastisement with a submissive attitude is spiritual _____.
10. Lewis Sperry Chafer names four general divisions of chastisement including (1) preventative, (2) _____, (3) _____ and (4) vindicative.

Suggested Reading

Chafer, Lewis Sperry. *Systematic Theology* Vol. 7. Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1993 (A brief discussion on pages 71-73).

Bruce, F. F. *The Epistle To The Hebrews in The New International Commentary On The New Testament*. Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1964. (Comments on Hebrews 12:4-11).

Kent, Homer A., Jr. *The Epistle to the Hebrews*. Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1972. (Comments on Hebrews 12:4-11).

Endnotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Sit them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they gav large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them. "But him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given for go and make disci tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit." and he

Quotes

- ¹ Fritz Rienecker. *Linguistic Key To The Greek New Testament* ed. by Cleon Rogers (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980) p. 714.
- ² Gerhard Kittel, ed. *The Theological Dictionary of the New Testament* Vol. 5 Translated by Geoffrey W. Bromiley (Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company., 1964-1968) pp. 596-625.
- ³ Homer A. Kent, Jr. *The Epistle to the Hebrews* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1972) p. 261.
- ⁴ Rienecker., *Ibid.*, p.714.
- ⁵ *Ibid.*, p. 714.
- ⁶ Kent., *Ibid.*, p. 262.
- ⁷ Kent., *Ibid.*, p.261.
- ⁸ F. F. Bruce. *The Epistle To The Hebrews in The New International Commentary On The New Testament* (Grand Rapids: Wm. B. Eerdmans Publishing Company, 1964) pp. 357-58.
- ⁹ *Ibid.*, pp. 358-59.
- ¹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 359.
- ¹¹ Lewis Sperry Chafer. *Systematic Theology* Vol. 7 (Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1993) pp. 71-73.



“God’s Discipline”

“Let us then remember that the taste of God’s love towards us cannot be had by us under chastisements, except we be fully persuaded that they are fatherly scourges by which he chastises us for our sin. No such thing can occur to the minds of the reprobate, for they are like fugitives.” ¹

JOHN CALVIN

“Every chastening, or afflictive providence, is appointed by God, and is looked upon by believers, when grace is in exercise, as coming from Him; and it is directed, and governed, and limited by Him, and is overruled by Him for His own glory, and their good: and this is not to be despised, as something nauseous and loathsome, or as unuseful and unprofitable, or as insignificant and unworthy of notice, but should be esteemed for the good ends, which are sometimes answered by it.” ²

JOHN GILL

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

...tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brethren in Galilee; there they will meet you."

The Guards' Report

While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met with the soldiers and devised a plan. They gave the soldiers a large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His disciples came during the night and stole the body while we were asleep.' If anyone reports this to the governor, we will kill you and keep you out of the country." The soldiers took the money and agreed. They were instructed. And this report was widely circulated among the Jews every day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had told them to go. When they saw him, they worshiped him, but some doubted. Then Jesus said to them, "All authority has been given to me in heaven and on earth. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And behold, I am with you always, to the end of the age."

"To treat the Lord's chastisements lightly, as something that is little, and the synonymous expression to relax (the verb is used in v. 3) when reproved by the Lord, means to fail in appreciating what the Lord thus does for his sons, to desire to be rid of his chastisement and his reproof: the very thing the readers were thinking of doing."³

R. C. H. LENSKI

"...judgment must begin at God's house; though, then, he may strike aliens and domestics alike, he yet so puts forth his hand to the latter as to shew that they are the objects of his peculiar care. But the previous one is the true solution, even that every one who knows and is persuaded that he is chastised by God, must immediately be led to this thought, that he is chastised because he is loved by God."⁴

JOHN CALVIN

"All men are not the objects of God's love, only a special people, whom he has chosen in Christ...these are chastened by him, and loved while they are chastened; their chastening is in love, as appears from the nature of God's love to them, which changes not; from the nature of chastening itself, which is that of a father; from the divine supports granted under it; from the ends of it, which are among others, that they might be more and more partakers of holiness, and not be condemned with the world."⁵

JOHN GILL

"Those earthly fathers could do only what seemed good to them when they were chastising; all chastising of the heavenly Father rests on what is actually profitable for us. There is never a mistake either subjectively or objectively on his part; the only question is: 'Shall we subject ourselves and receive this blessed profit.' What this profit is, is made plain by the added clause, 'so that we partake of his holiness'. "⁶

R. C. H. LENSKI

"This he adds, lest we should measure God's chastisements by our present feelings; for he shews that we are like children who dread the rod and shun it as much as they can, for owing to their age they cannot yet judge how useful it may be to them.the object, then, of this admonition is, that chastisements cannot be estimated aright if judged according to what the flesh feels under them, and that therefore we must fix our eyes on the end: we shall thus receive the peaceable fruit of righteousness. "⁷

JOHN CALVIN

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met and devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped, doubted. "Then Jesus and said, 'All authority on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "And when you have received the Holy Spirit, you will be able to speak to one another as

"'O Lord deliver me from this.' When Paul heard that, he said, 'Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Christ may rest upon me.' The weaker I am the better opportunity Christ has to manifest Himself in me. And then in the concluding verse of this section he says, 'Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then I am strong.' May God give each one of us to take that place of subjection to the will of God where we can glory in infirmities."⁸

H. A. IRONSIDE

"And every branch that beareth fruit he pruneth. By these words, he shows that believers need incessant culture, that they may be prevented from degenerating; and that they produce nothing good, unless God continually apply his hand."⁹

JOHN CALVIN

Quotes

- ¹ John Calvin. *Hebrews in Calvin's Commentaries XXII* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 316.
- ² John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 9* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 473.
- ³ R. C. H. Lenski. *The Interpretation of the Epistle to the Hebrews and the Epistle of James* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1966) p. 434.
- ⁴ John Calvin. *Hebrews in Calvin's Commentaries XXII* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) pp. 316-17.
- ⁵ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 9* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 473.
- ⁶ R. C. H. Lenski. *The Interpretation of the Epistle to the Hebrews and the Epistle of James* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1966) p. 439.
- ⁷ John Calvin. *Hebrews in Calvin's Commentaries XXII* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 320.
- ⁸ H. A. Ironside. *II Corinthians* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1990) p.265.
- ⁹ John Calvin. *John in Calvin's Commentaries Vol. XVIII* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 108.





Developing Godly Habits of Living

In "A Word From The Author" at the beginning of your manual, I mentioned that after fifteen years in the Christian faith I was still a spiritual runt. I knew that Christ had not only come to pay for my sins but also to give me abundant life, but I had never experienced such a life. Then a broken relationship brought pain as I had never experienced. This turned me back to my Heavenly Father and helped me to realize that if I kept trying to run my own life and not yielding my life to Him, it would continue to head toward disaster. At that point I made a critical decision to follow Christ and yield to His lordship. That is when significant growth started to be evident in my daily walk with God. I started to slowly grow in my understanding and commitment to living out His attitudes and actions in all areas of my life. Slowly, the abundant life became a reality. As Christians we have a clear choice. We can chose to live the life of a rebellious son or daughter and be miserable and unfruitful or we can chose to be obedient and live an abundant life, continually experiencing our Father's blessings. If we choose the latter we need to know something about how to discern our Father's desire for our daily walk and be able to develop godly habits of living.



As Christians we have been given all we need to _____ live an obedient life (2 Pet. 1:3). "God's provision for us consists in delivering us from the reign of sin, uniting us with Christ, and giving us the indwelling Holy Spirit to reveal sin, to create a desire for holiness, and to strengthen us..."¹ These are all expounded on by Paul in his letter to the church at Rome. For most of us, even though we have all of this provision for the abundant Christian life at our spiritual birth, we still do not experience such a life. There are at least two reasons for this. The first is the need for _____ or dedication. In Romans 12:1-2, after teaching us about our richness in Christ as mentioned above, Paul states, "I urge you, therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the will of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect." Before he starts his section on practical living, Paul urges us to consecrate our lives since such instruction would be useless unless we are dedicated not only to know it but to live it out. As Charles Ryrie states, "Before any lasting progress can be made on the road of spiritual living, the believer must be a _____ person. Although this is not a requirement for salvation, it is



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards, we and reported to the chief thing that had happened. **How Shall We Then Live?** devised a plan. They got large. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it. soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded by Him with you all

the basic foundation for sanctification. ...dedication [or consecration] is a complete crisis commitment of self for all the years of one's life. Such dedication can be triggered by some problem or decision that has to be faced, but it concerns a person, the child of God, not an activity or ambition or plan for the future....Dedication is a break with one's own _____ over his life and a giving of that _____ to the Lord ... it does provide the basis for solution, growth and progress in the Christian life."² Thus, we must come to the point in our lives where we are willing to make Jesus Christ Lord over all our life. This means that when He shows us areas of our life that are out of line with His Word and will, we are ready to turn those areas over to His lordship and to allow the Spirit to transform our attitudes and actions in that area to that which He desires.



The second reason that we do not experience the abundant life that Christ purchased for us on the cross is the fact that we have not _____ godly habits of living. The developing of godly habits takes not only a consecrated life but also a life of personal discipline. In Paul's first letter to Timothy he writes, "*But have nothing to do with worldly fables fit only for old women. On the other hand, discipline yourself for the purpose of godliness*" (1 Tim. 4:7).

Living a godly life is not something that occurs by accident; it comes as we consecrate ourselves and then pursue godliness through godly discipline. The Greek term translated "discipline" in our text is the word *gumnazo* and means "to _____". Victor C. Pfitzner states, "It is not the ascetic struggle of the individual for his own moral and religious perfection, but the training necessary for the unhindered pursuit of God's purposes."³ Paul's command to Timothy comes in the context of confronting false teachers with sound doctrine (1 Tim. 4:1-6). The discipline of observing religious _____ is of little profit eternally but training ourselves for _____ "*holds promise for this present life [the abundant life] and for the life to come*" (1 Tim. 4:8). Training in godliness expresses itself in godly _____ as Paul points out. In 4:12, he encourages Timothy to "*in speech, conduct, love, faith and purity, show yourself an example of those who believe.*" A last thing to note in this passage is that discipline in godliness is tied very closely to "sound doctrine" (also, 4:11, 13). What we believe will affect how we live. We need also to be reminded here that the motive from which we pursue biblical knowledge is important. As Howard Hendricks states, "The Bible was written not to satisfy your curiosity but to help you conform to Christ's image. Not to make you a smarter sinner but to make you like the Savior. Not to fill your head with a collection of biblical facts but to transform your life [commenting on 1 Peter 2:2]."⁴ Our lives are _____ when we are trained by God's Word and develop godly habits of living as a result.



The Old and New Natures

In our study, *DEALING WITH TEMPTATION*, we learned that we all inherit from Adam a fallen nature that has a natural bent toward sin (Rom. 7:14, 17-24; Gal. 5:17). In addition, we learned that at salvation we are given a new nature that desires to do good (Rom. 7:22). As Paul teaches us in Galatians 5:17, in our daily walk there will be a battle going on between the _____ (the old nature) and the _____ (the power behind the new nature). He writes, "For the flesh sets its desire against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh; for these are in opposition to one another, so that you may not do the things that you please." (Gal. 5:17). The new nature has the desire to follow God's law (Rom. 7:22) but it must be "programmed" by the principles of the Word of God. This is how godly habits are developed and a godly life is lived (See Chart at end of lesson).

The Holy Spirit first inspired the words of the Holy Scripture to be recorded without error (2 Pet. 1:21; 2 Tim. 3:16) so that we would have a written record of what God's _____ is for us. These Scriptures which we have to study are the very words of God. Throughout our Christian walk, if we are diligent in our study of God's Word, we will be _____ learning about God's desire for our attitudes and actions. This, along with the daily experiences God leads us through, is how the process of _____ the mind takes place. Through our knowledge of God's Word and our experiences in life of living out these truths and "proving them" (Rom. 12:2), we learn more and more to allow the Holy Spirit to lead us in our actions and attitudes. In our daily walk we will continually be confronted with making a _____ of allowing ourselves to be "driven by our own desires" or "led by the Spirit." The Spirit will remind us of what we have learned from God's Word, prompt us to make the right choice and then if we do, we can trust Him to _____ us to put that God-honoring decision into action. If we live an obedient lifestyle, over time and through circumstances, we will learn to yield ourselves to the Spirit's guidance in every situation. We will more and more live a Spirit-filled life! Paul told the Ephesian believers, "... in reference to your former manner of life, you lay aside the old self [the old nature], which is being corrupted in accordance with the lusts of deceit, and that you be renewed in the spirit of your mind, and put on the new self [the new nature], which in the likeness of God has been created in righteousness and holiness of the truth" (Eph. 4:22-24).



The above explanation will help us to see that the old adage, "Just let go and let God" is theologically unsound. This process of pursuing a godly life is a joint venture. God does not over-ride our will. We must have that consecrated desire and continually make the decision to yield to the Spirit's leading. We can also see from our chart how important study of the Word of God is in our daily walk; our mind must be renewed. Now it should be clear to everyone why in a day of gross biblical ignorance, the moral and ethical life of the Church is not much different in many instances than that of the World!

tell his disciples. "Suc
em. "Greetings," he s
him, clasped his feet
him. "Then Jesus said to
e afraid. Go and tell m
Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women w
some of the guards we
nd reported to the chi
thing that had happen
chief priests had met wit
devised a plan, they gav
large sum of money.
You are to say, 'His
during the night and
while we were asleep.'
gets to the governor, we
nd keep you out of t
soldiers took the money
were instructed. And thi
widely circulated among
very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven d
Galilee, to the mount
had told them to go. I
him, they worshiped
doubted. "Then Jesus
and said, "All authorit
on earth has been giv
fore go and make disc
tions, baptizing them i
the Holy Spirit," and teach
everybody. "I have comm
and at

How Do We Train Ourselves For Godliness?

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Suc-
them. "Greetings," he s-
to him, clasped his feet
him. "Then Jesus said to
be afraid. Go and tell in
to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women w-
some of the guards we
and reported to the chi-
thing that had happen-
chief priests had met wit-
devised a plan, they got
large sum of money.
'You are to say, 'His
during the night and
while we were asleep,'
gets to the governor, we
and keep you out of it-
soldiers took the money,
were instructed. And this
widely circulated among
very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven d-
Galilee, to the mount-
had told them to go. "I
him, they worshiped
doubted. "Then Jesus
and said, "All authority
on earth has been given
to you, go and make disci-
ples, baptizing them in
the Father and of the
Holy Spirit. "and teach
them to obey all that I have com-

In previous lessons we have already discussed developing a pattern of *PERSONAL BIBLE STUDY AND SCRIPTURE MEMORIZATION*. In our *PERSONAL BIBLE STUDY* lesson we looked at the following helpful comments and steps in application:

Application (How Does It Apply To Me?)

Application involves drawing _____ out of the Word of God and applying them to our own life. "The Bible was not written to satisfy your _____; it was written to _____ your life. The ultimate goal of Bible study, then, is not to do something to the Bible, but to allow the Bible to do something to you, so truth becomes tangent to life."⁵ Bible study becomes life-transforming if we have "presented our body a living sacrifice" (Rom. 12:1). As Zuck puts it, "We must have a willing heart, a willingness to appropriate the truths of the Scriptures into our experience."⁶

Ask Application Questions

Hendricks and Hendricks suggest nine application questions as we study God's Word to help us in applying it to our lives. They include:

1. Is there an example for me to follow?
2. Is there a sin to avoid?
3. Is there a promise to claim?
4. Is there a prayer to repeat?
5. Is there a command to obey?
6. Is there a condition to meet?
7. Is there a verse to memorize?
8. Is there an error to mark?
9. Is there a challenge to face?

Meditate on God's Principles

One thing that we have not talked much about is meditation. God said to Joshua as he was assuming leadership over Israel, "This book of the law shall not depart from your mouth, but **you shall meditate on it day and night**, so that you may be careful to do according to all that is written in it; for then you will make your way prosperous, and then you will have success" (Joshua 1:8). "To _____ on the Scriptures is to think about them, turning them over in our minds, and applying them to our life's situations."⁸ When we know the Scriptures and have developed principles of application through meditation, then we must simply choose to obey and depend on the Holy Spirit for the power to carry out these godly actions and attitudes. As Bridges writes, "Obeying the Scriptures usually requires change in our patterns of life.

MATTHEW 27-28

Because we are sinful by nature, we have developed sinful _____, which we call habits. Discipline is required to break any habit. If a boy has developed the wrong style of swinging a bat, he cannot just decide to change instantly. He has developed a certain habit, and much discipline — much correction and training — is required to break that bad habit and develop a new one. In the same way, our patterns of disobedience to God have been developed over a number of years and are not broken easily or without discipline.”⁹

The keys to “disciplining ourselves for godliness” are _____ and _____. We may fail many times in areas before we obtain victory and develop the godly habit we are pursuing. By communicating our desires to God we stay aware of our need for His strength to _____ the power of the flesh. This is of extreme importance since it is clear from Paul’s discussion in Romans 7-8 that the new nature has no power to live out its godly desires apart from the indwelling Holy Spirit. Then, when victory in daily life comes, we are reminded that He receives the praise for the victory. This helps us to not get “puffed up” but to walk in humility. We also need to stay _____. The famous preacher of the Great Awakening Jonathan Edwards, “who resolved never to do anything he would be afraid to do if it was the last hour of his life, also made this resolution: ‘Resolved, never to give over, nor in the least to slacken, my fight with my corruptions, however unsuccessful I may be.’”¹⁰



Summary

Most of us, even though we have the provision to live the abundant Christian life at our spiritual birth, still do not experience such a life. There are at least two reasons for this. The first is the need for consecration or dedication. As Charles Ryrie states, “Before any lasting progress can be made on the road of spiritual living, the believer must be a dedicated person. Dedication is a break with one’s own control over his life and a giving of that control to the Lord.

The second reason that we do not experience the abundant life that Christ purchased for us on the cross is the fact that we have not developed godly habits of living. Our lives are transformed when we are trained by God’s Word and develop godly habits of living as a result. In our study, *DEALING WITH TEMPTATION*, we learned that we all inherit from Adam a fallen nature that has a natural bent toward sin (Rom. 7:14, 17-24; Gal. 5:17). In addition, we learned that at salvation we are given a new nature that desires to do good (Rom. 7:22). In our daily walk we will continually be confronted with making a choice of allowing ourselves to be “driven by our own desires” or “led by the Spirit.” The Spirit will remind us of what we have learned

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them, "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee, there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they ga large sum of money, "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. f him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been give fore go and make dis tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach t: "Go into all the wor

from God's Word, prompt us to make the right choice and then if we do, we can trust Him to empower us to put that God-honoring decision into action.

This process of pursuing a godly life is a joint venture. God does not over-ride our will. We must have that consecrated desire and continually make the decision to yield to the Spirit's leading. We can also see from our chart how important study of the Word of God is in our daily walk; our mind must be renewed.

Application involves drawing life principles out of the Word of God and applying them to our own lives. "The Bible was not written to satisfy your curiosity; it was written to transform your life. The ultimate goal of Bible study, then, is not to do something to the Bible, but to allow the Bible to do something to you, so truth becomes tangent to life." It is also important to meditate on the principles that we draw out of God's Word. To meditate on the Scriptures is to think about them, turning them over in our minds, and applying them to our life's situations. When we know the Scriptures and have developed principles of application through meditation, then we must simply choose to obey and depend on the Holy Spirit for the power to carry out these godly actions and attitudes. Through persistence and dependence we can develop godly habits of living.



Test Your Knowledge

1. There are at least two reasons that we do not experience the abundant life. The first reason is the need to _____ or dedicate ourselves to the Lord.
2. As Charles Ryrie states, "Before any lasting progress can be made on the road of spiritual living, the believer must be a _____ person."
3. Living a godly life is not something that occurs by accident, it comes as we consecrate ourselves and then _____ godliness through godly discipline.
4. Training in godliness expresses itself in godly _____ as Paul points out.
5. In our study, *DEALING WITH TEMPTATION*, we learned that we all inherit from Adam a _____ nature that has a natural bent toward sin (Rom. 7:14, 17-24; Gal. 5:17). In addition, we learned that at salvation we are given a _____ nature that desires to do good (Rom. 7:22).
6. In our daily walk we will continually be confronted with making a _____ of allowing ourselves to be "driven by our own desires" or "led by the Spirit."

7. Throughout our Christian walk, if we are diligent in our study of God's Word, we will be _____ learning about God's desire for our attitudes and actions.
8. Application involves drawing _____ out of the Word of God and applying them to our own life. "The Bible was not written to satisfy your _____; it was written to _____ your life.
9. "To _____ on the Scriptures is to think about them, turning them over in our minds, and applying them to our life's situations."
10. "Obeying the Scriptures usually requires a change in our patterns of life. Because we are sinful by nature, we have developed sinful _____ which we call habits. Discipline is required to break any habit."
11. The keys to "disciplining ourselves for godliness" are _____ and _____.
12. By communicating our desires to God we stay aware of our need for His strength to _____ the power of the flesh.

Suggested Reading

Hughes, R. Kent. *Disciplines of a Godly Man*. Wheaton: Crossway Books, 1991.

Getz, Gene A. *The Measure of a Man*. Glendale: Regal Books, 1974.

_____. *The Measure of a Woman*. Glendale: Regal Books, 1975.

_____. *The Measure of a Family*. Glendale: Regal Books, 1976.

Endnotes

¹ Jerry Bridges. *The Pursuit of Holiness* (Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978) p. 81.

² Charles R. Ryrie. *Balancing The Christian Life* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1969) pp. 186-187.

³ As quoted by Rienecker, Fritz. *Linguistic Key To The Greek New Testament* ed. Cleon Rogers (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1980) p. 626.

⁴ Howard G. Hendricks and William D. Hendricks. *Living By The Book* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1991) p.19.

⁵ Ibid. p. 284.

⁶ Roy B. Zuck. *Basic Bible Interpretation* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1991) p. 279.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women were some of the guards, we and reported the thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to you, go and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to observe all that I have commanded you."

⁷ Ibid. p. 308.

⁸ Bridges. Ibid., p. 102.

⁹ Ibid., pp. 103-104.

¹⁰ As quoted by Bridges, Ibid. p. 106.



“Developing Godly Habits of Living”

“Experiential sanctification is the result of yieldedness to God. Complete self-dedication to God is our reasonable service: ‘That ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service’ (Rom. 12:1). By so doing the Christian is classified and set apart unto God by his own choice. This is self-determined separation unto God and is an important aspect of experiential sanctification.”¹

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

“No one will live a truly pious life who neglects the means which God has given to us for this purpose. We have the Word of God; we need to study our Bibles. And we need to take much time for prayer. Then we must be faithful in testifying to those who are unsaved. To honor God in these things is to be exercised unto godliness.”²

H. A. IRONSIDE

“The athletic term ‘exercise thyself’ as a gymnast does by gymnastic training and contests is metaphorical and is explained in v. 10 where Paul includes himself: ‘we toil and strain.’ All the ardent, strenuous efforts of Timothy are to be put forth with respect to godliness, he is to be interested in this cause alone.”³

R. C. H. LENSKI

“Positionally the ‘old man’ has been put off forever. Experimentally [experientially] the ‘old man’ remains as an active force in the life and can be controlled only by the power of God. ...It still abides with the Christian as an active principle in his life, and his experimental [experiential] victory over it will be realized only through a definite reliance upon the indwelling Holy Spirit.”⁴

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

“ ‘And be renewed in the spirit of your mind’ [Eph. 4:23]. ...the Holy Spirit; who is in the saints, and is the author of renovation in them; and who is the reviver and carrier-on, and finisher of the work and therefore that is called the renewing of the Holy Spirit.”⁵

JOHN GILL

“ ‘Being renewed in the spirit of your mind.’ Then how am I renewed in the spirit of my mind? As I feed upon His Word, as I enjoy communion with Him, enjoy fellowship with His beloved people. In all these ways we are being renewed in the spirit of our minds.”⁶

H. A. IRONSIDE

“We must be sure that in the entire process of studying, interpreting, and applying the Bible, we are relying on the Holy Spirit to guide us. We need to ask the Holy Spirit to show us areas in our lives where application is needed, and then to make us sensitive to that need, and to give us the desire to change by appropriating the truth. In applying God’s Word we need to ask the Holy Spirit to work in us to bring about changes in our lives that will make us more Christlike.”⁷

ROY B. ZUCK

“Lady Macbeth was not the first to cry out in anguish of soul because of the guilt consciousness of her sin. This is a universal problem and like her, billions of people have no idea where to go for cleansing. This should never bother a Bible-taught Christian because as our Lord said, ‘Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you’ (John 15:3). The Word of God has a cleansing effect upon the believer.”⁸

TIM LAHAYE

“Application, the crowning step in Bible study, can be exciting as you see the Scriptures working in your own life. As the Word of God penetrates our souls, it enables us to see areas where improvement is needed and enables us also to overcome weaknesses by the Holy Spirit’s enabling and to ‘grow thereby’ (1 Peter 2:2 KJV). Knowing the truth of God is essential, but blessing comes from doing it.”⁹

ROY B. ZUCK

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor. we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

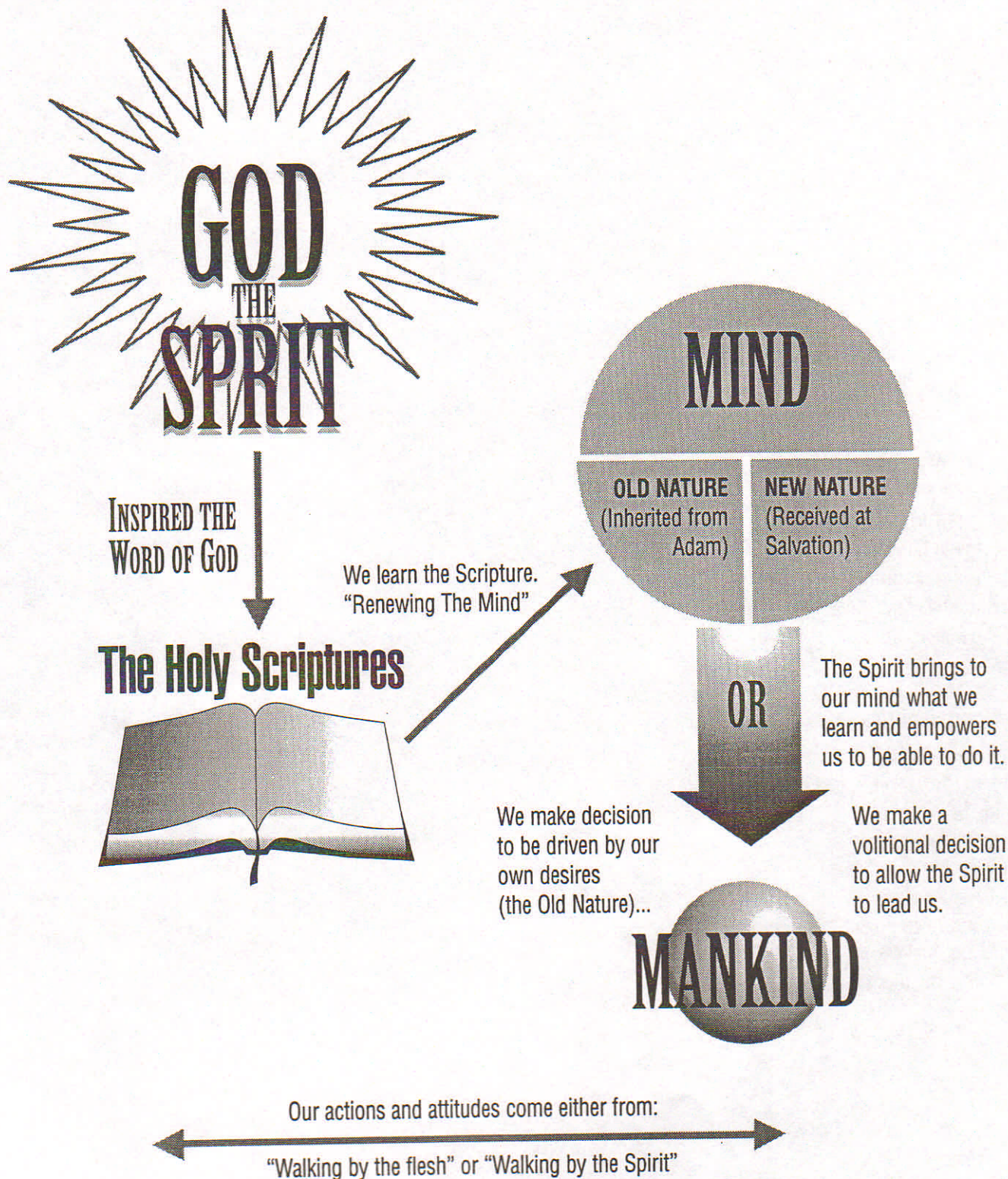
The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ¹⁹and teach

- ¹ Lewis S. Chafer. *Major Bible Themes* rev. John F. Walvoord (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1974) p. 208.
- ² H. A. Ironside. *Timothy - Titus - Philemon* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1947) p. 104.
- ³ R. C. H. Lenski. *The Interpretation of St. Paul's Epistles to the Colossians, to the Thessalonians, to Timothy, to Titus and to Philemon* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1966) p.632.
- ⁴ Lewis S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. II* (Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1947) p. 348.
- ⁵ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 9* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 93.
- ⁶ H. A. Ironside. *Galatians - Ephesians* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1981) p. 218.
- ⁷ Roy B. Zuck. *Basic Bible Interpretation* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1991) p. 292.
- ⁸ Tim LaHaye. *How To Study The Bible For Yourself* (Irvine: Harvest House Publishers, 1976) p. 17.
- ⁹ Zuck. *Ibid.*, p. 292.



Daily Walk



MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor. we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount. had told them to go. ¹⁷him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everywhere I have commanded

Knowing God's Will



MATTHEW 27-

tell his disciples.
 m. "Greetings."
 him, clasped his
 um. ¹⁰Then Jesus said
 be afraid. Go and tell m
 Ga

What Do I Do?

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w
 some of the guards we
 and reported to the chi
 thing that had happen
 chief priests had met wit
 devised a plan. they ga
 large sum of money.

You are to say, 'His
 during the night and
 while we were asleep.'
 gets to the governor, we

and keep you out of t
 oldi
 were
 widely
 very

Why Should I Seek God's Will?

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d
 Galilee, to the mount
 had told them to go. ¹
 him, they worshiped
 doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus
 and said, "All authorit
 on earth has been givr
 fore go and make disc
 tions, baptizing them i
 the Father and of the
 Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach
 everything I have contr
 such

The decision would affect the rest of my life. To be honest, that was a little scary. What if she was not the right one for me? What if I stopped loving her after a few months or years? After I say, "I do," there is no turning back! I am sure you can relate to the intensity of some of the previous searching questions. You have probably faced such a life-changing decision as well. Some decisions are so important that we fear making a mistake and missing God's best for our lives. Often these tough decisions deal with career or family issues. We want God's will in these decisions, but how do we find it??? How do we really know what is God's will, God's word on the matter? Well, I have good news. We can discern what God's will is for our lives and in this chapter we will find out how.



We return again to a passage that has become very familiar to us. In fact by now we should have it memorized. The passage is Romans 12:1-2 where Paul writes, "I URGE you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, to present your bodies a living and holy sacrifice, acceptable to God, which is your spiritual service of worship. And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what the _____ of God is, that which is good and acceptable and perfect." This passage has some very important things to say about knowing God's will. Notice first that to be able to "prove" (Gr. *dokimazein*, meaning "to prove by testing") what God's will is, we must be allowing our minds to be renewed! As we studied in our last lesson, the _____ of our mind is essential to developing habits of godly living and to overall Christian maturity. Thus, it should not be surprising to find out that to be able to discern God's will, we need to allow our minds to be renewed (Gr. *metamorphous* the, meaning a change in form or a change from inside out) by God's Word. Doing God's will should be the _____ of every child of God since His will is "good, and acceptable and perfect" and in I John 2:17 we read that "the one who does the will of God abides forever."



In What Areas of My Life Is God's Will Clear?

to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to him, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me, just as I said to you.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had met with the chief priests and had devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money, and they said, 'You are to say, "The Lord's body was not here," during the night and while we were asleep.' They agreed to do this, and they kept the money. The soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. There they worshiped him, but they doubted. Then Jesus appeared to them and said, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Now go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age.'"

In most of our everyday _____ and _____ decisions it is not difficult to know God's will since the principles are clearly outlined in His Word. There are several passages that clearly outline God's will in specific areas.

God's Will In My _____ To My Sin

The first passage is 2 Corinthians 7:8-10. Paul is writing for a second time to the church in Corinth. The first letter was very strong in rebuking them for their many excesses and immaturity. Paul felt sorrow for the fact that his letter had to be so harsh the first time he wrote them but he is rejoicing in the effect that the letter had on them. The letter made them sorrowful to the point of repentance. Paul states in verses 9-10, "*I now rejoice, not that you were made sorrowful, but that you were made sorrowful to the point of repentance; for you were made sorrowful according to the will of God, in order that you might not suffer loss in anything through us. For the sorrow that is according to the will of God produces a repentance without regret, leading to salvation; but the sorrow of the world produces death.*" Here we see that sorrow over our sin that leads to _____ is clearly the will of God!

God's Will In My _____

In Ephesians 6:5-6 we read, "*Slaves, be obedient to those who are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in the sincerity of your heart, as to Christ; 6 not by way of eyeservice, as men-pleasers, but as slaves of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart.*" Although Paul is discussing slaves here, most scholars agree that the abiding principle can be applied to the _____ relationship of our day. We are to be model employees, obediently serving in our jobs as unto Christ (Col. 3:22-25; I Tim. 6:1-2; Tit. 2:9-10). We are to "render service as to the _____, and not to men" (Eph. 6:7). It is the _____ who will ultimately reward us for our faithful service (Eph. 6:8). In addition, employers are exhorted to treat their employees with the same respect "as unto the Lord" (Eph. 6:9).

God's Will In My _____ Life

In I Thessalonians 4:1-8, Paul deals with another area of God's will that is clear for our lives. He states, "*For this is the will of God, your sanctification; that is, that you abstain from sexual immorality*" (1 Thess. 4:3). The word translated "sexual immorality" in our verse is *porneia*. *Porneia* includes incest, _____, "prostitution, unchastity [and] _____, [and] is used for every kind of unlawful sexual intercourse."¹ This combined with the thought that sanctification is the goal of abstaining from this immorality would force us to include in our day any type of pornography or even illicit sexual thoughts. If we do not abstain from such practices, we are rejecting God Himself (4:8). God's will for our sexual life is for us to _____ from sexual immorality and preserve sexual intimacy solely for the _____ relationship.

God's Will In My _____

Peter also gives us some insight on something that is clearly God's will for our life. In his first epistle he writes, "*Submit yourselves for the Lord's sake to every human institution, whether to a king as the one in authority, or to governors as sent by him for the punishment of evildoers and the praise of those who do right. For such is the will of God that by doing right you may silence the ignorance of foolish men*" (2 Peter 2:13-15). Thus, as Christians we are to be _____ citizens. We are to be in _____ to our human governments by following the laws, paying taxes, praying for them and being involved in the voting process (Matt. 22:21; Rom. 13:1-7; 1 Tim. 2:1-3). Only in those cases when God's law and man's law _____ do we not obey our government officials (Acts 4:19-20). As Peter points out, our excellent behavior will be an incredible witness to those around us (2 Peter 2:17).

God's Will For Our _____

Peter now addresses the will of God in our suffering. In 1 Peter 4:19 he writes, "*Therefore, let those also who suffer according to the will of God entrust their souls to a faithful Creator in doing what is right.*" Peter's readers were experiencing some severe persecution ("fiery trials") as a result of their witness for Christ (1 Peter 4:13-14, 16). Peter lets them know that their suffering is actually being used by God as a _____ of their faith and an instrument in their _____ process (1 Peter 4:12, 17-18). The Christians were to react by _____ in a sovereign and faithful Creator and continuing to do right no matter what it cost them. God works all things for our good, even suffering in persecution (Rom. 8:28). Thus, it is God's will for us to suffer sometimes and during such suffering we are to _____ in the fact that God is allowing and controlling the circumstances.

God's Will For _____ (Pastor-Teachers)

Peter's final mention of the will of God has to do with those chosen by God to be elders (pastors-teachers) of local churches. He states, "*Therefore, I exhort the elders among you, as your fellow elder and witness of the sufferings of Christ, and a partaker also of the glory that is to be revealed, shepherd the flock of God among you, exercising oversight not under compulsion, but voluntarily, according to the will of God; and not for sordid gain, but with eagerness*" (1 Peter 5:1-2). Those whom God calls to be elders of the flock have a huge responsibility before God. They are to _____ the flock that God has given them which will involve _____ them with a healthy diet from the Word of God ("equipping the saints for the work of the service" - Eph. 4:12), as well as _____ them from any danger (false doctrine). They are to _____ lead the flock providing a godly example by their conduct (Eph. 5:2-3). And as we see here, they are to exercise oversight voluntarily and with eagerness, which is the will of God for them!

There are obviously many decisions that we will have to make in our life that the previous discussion didn't address. These decisions are the ones with which most of us struggle. Questions such as: Should I get married? If so, who should I marry?

But What About Decisions That God's Word Does Not Directly Address?

to the "Galilee" he said to his feet and said to be in Galilee and tell me to Galilee, there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met we devised a plan. they gave large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it. soldiers took the money were instructed. And the widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go to him, they worshiped, doubted. "Then Jesus and said, 'All authority on earth has been given me, go and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and

What career should I pursue? Should I go to technical school, a university, or directly into the work force with my existing skills and education? Should I change jobs or keep this one? These are the questions with which we struggle, uncertain of what is right — what is best, and desire to know God's perspective. There is exciting news for the person in this situation. God promises us that He will answer our prayer for wisdom in such situations if we will only ask in faith knowing that He can supply the answer. James 1:5 states, "But if any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all men generously and without reproach, and it will be given to him." God desires for us to walk in His will and has provided all that we need to know to do just that. Let us look at some practical steps to help us in finding God's will in those decisions that are not specifically addressed in Scripture.

Practical Steps To Finding God's Will

1. _____ for God's Guidance (James 1:5).

Again, James states, "But if any of you lacks wisdom, let him ask of God, who gives to all men generously and without reproach, and it will be given to him." When we examine Scripture we find that in the past God has chosen to guide His people in many different ways, sometimes in direct and miraculous ways. But in our day God does not normally choose to guide through the use of fleeces, clouds, smoke or visions. One reason for that is the fact that in this age all believers are indwelt with the Holy Spirit, something unique to the Church Age. Thus, God will normally choose to _____ us by the inward guidance of the Spirit. As we pray for God's guidance in our decision, there will be a _____ and _____ inwardly if it is in line with His will. If you are uneasy about your decision, this is probably the Holy Spirit warning you.

2. Carefully _____ the Decision in Light of Biblical Principles (Ps. 119:105).

Proverbs 2 extols the virtues of gaining the knowledge and wisdom of God through treasuring His "commandments _____ you" (Prov. 2:1). The regular Bible study and Scripture memorization you have been involved in will be of great benefit here. In allowing your mind to be renewed by continual input of the Word of God you will have gained knowledge and wisdom that the Holy Spirit will bring to mind as you think through the decisions you must make. The benefits of gaining wisdom are expounded in Proverbs 2. Solomon states, "Then you will _____ righteousness and justice.....to _____ you from the way of evil....[and]so you will _____ in the way of good men" (Prov. 2:9a, 12a, 20a). We are constantly called on to consider our actions and to apply scriptural wisdom to all decisions. The decision of the Jerusalem counsel is a clear example of using scriptural wisdom to make a very important decision (see Acts 15).

3. Think _____ (Proverbs 16:9).

Proverbs 16:9 states, "The mind of man plans his way, But the LORD directs his steps." Planning ahead is the way of the wise individual. In making major decisions it is important to think through the implications of your decisions in light of the future. Will you still be pleased with this decision next week, next year, or ten years down the road? How is this decision likely to affect your life, family or career a week, a month or a year down the road?

4. Seek the _____ of Older, More Mature, Godly Believers (Prov. 12:15).

Proverbs 12:15 states, "The way of a fool is right in his own eyes; But a wise man is he who listens to counsel." In addition, we read in Proverbs 11:14, "Where there is no guidance, the people fall, But in abundance of counselors there is victory" (see also Prov. 24:6). There will always be people who know the Bible, human nature, and our gifts and talents better than we do. There will also be some decisions in our lives where our spiritual "vision" is _____, such as times when we "fall in love" or we see a possibility of our dreams being fulfilled. Our _____ can cloud the judgment of most of us in the right situations and this is the time we need the opinions of others. When seeking counsel, always ask for the reasoning behind the advice. Even in those situations when in the end we go against the counsel of some of our advisors, nothing but benefit will come from weighing carefully what they advise.

5. _____ on The Lord (Ps. 27:14).

God's timing is not always our timing. Sometimes we just need to wait on the Lord. We need to remember that He is _____. He has a reason for not sending us an answer immediately and we will know His answer in perfect time. Psalm 27:14 states, "Wait for the Lord; Be strong, and let your heart take courage; Yes, wait for the Lord." Psalm 37:34 states, "Wait for the Lord and keep His way." God is not in as much of a hurry as us, and it is not always His way to reveal more of His will for the future than we need for action in the present, or to guide us more than one step at a time. When in doubt, do nothing, but continue to wait on the Lord. When action is needed, He will reveal enough of His will to us to take the appropriate action.

When we are leading a Spirit-filled life and walking in obedience, these steps come naturally in confronting a difficult decision. If they do not, we need to determine to walk in obedience by getting serious about our pursuit of holiness!

Summary

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will find me."

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were going to buy spices, some of the guards were awakened and reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met with the guards and devised a plan; they gave them a large sum of money, saying, "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep, we got to the governor, we bribed him, and he kept you out of the prison; and the soldiers took the money from you and were instructed. And this is what happened, and this is what we did.' And this story is widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

¹²When the eleven disciples had returned to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to, they worshiped him, but they doubted. ¹³Then Jesus appeared to them and said, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Now go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

It should not be surprising to find out that to be able to discern God's will, we need to allow our minds to be renewed (Gr. *metamorphousthe*, meaning a change in form or a change from inside out) by God's Word. Doing God's will should be the desire of every child of God since His will is "good, and acceptable and perfect" and in I John 2:17 we read that "the one who does the will of God abides forever."

There are several passages that clearly outline God's will in specific areas. The topics in these passages include: (1) God's will in my reaction to my sin (2 Cor. 7:8-10), (2) God's will in my job (Eph. 6:5-6), (3) God's will in my sexual life (1Thess. 4:1-8), (4) God's will in my citizenship (2 Pet.2:13-15; Rom. 13:1-7; 1 Tim. 2:1-3), (5) God's will for our suffering (1 Pet. 4:13-19), and (6) God's will for elders or pastor-teachers (I Peter 5:1-2).

But there are many decisions that Scripture does not directly address. In these decisions there are some practical steps to help us in finding God's will. These practical steps to find God's will include: (1) praying for God's guidance (James 1:5), (2) carefully thinking through the decision in light of biblical principles (Ps. 119:105), (3) thinking ahead (Prov. 16:9), (4) seeking the advice of older, more mature, godly believers (Prov. 12:15), and (5) waiting on the Lord (Ps. 27:14).

When we are leading a Spirit-filled life and walking in obedience, these steps come naturally in confronting a difficult decision. If they do not, we need to determine to walk in obedience by getting serious about our pursuit of holiness!



Test Your Knowledge

1. The _____ of our mind is essential to developing habits of godly living and to overall Christian maturity. Thus, it should not be surprising to find out that to be able to discern God's will, we need to allow our minds to be renewed by God's Word.
2. In most of our everyday _____ and _____ decisions it is not difficult to know God's will since the principles are clearly outlined in His Word.
3. According to 2 Corinthians 7:8-10, sorrow over our sin that leads to _____ is clearly the will of God!

4. Although Paul is discussing slaves in Ephesians 6:5-6, most scholars agree that the abiding principle can be applied to the _____ - _____ relationship of our day. We are to be model employees, obediently serving in our jobs as unto Christ.
5. God's will for our sexual life is for us to _____ from sexual immorality and preserve sexual intimacy solely for the _____ relationship.
6. It is God's will for us to suffer sometimes and during such suffering we are to _____ in the fact that God is allowing and controlling the circumstances.
7. As Christians we are to be _____ citizens. We are to be in _____ to our human governments by following the laws, paying taxes, praying for them and being involved in the voting process.
8. The elders or pastor-teachers are to _____ the flock that God has given them which will involve _____ them with a healthy diet from the Word of God ("equipping the saints for the work of the service" - Eph. 4:12), as well as _____ them from any danger (false doctrine). They are to _____ lead the flock providing a godly example by their conduct.
9. There are many decisions that Scripture does not directly address. In these decisions there are some practical steps to help us in finding God's will. These practical steps to find God's will include: (1) _____ for God's guidance (James 1:5), (2) carefully _____ the decision in light of biblical principles (Ps. 119:105), (3) thinking _____ (Proverbs 16:9), (4) seeking the _____ of older, more mature, godly believers (Prov. 12:15), and (5) _____ on the Lord (Ps. 27:14).

Suggested Reading

Packer, J. I. *Knowing God*. Downers Grove: InterVarsity Press, 1973.

MacArthur Jr., John. *If God's Will Is So Important - Why Can't I Find It?* Panorama City: Word of Grace Communications, 1980, 1986. (This is a paperback album containing two taped messages, "God's Will Is Not Secret," and "Making the Hard Decisions Easy.")

Bonar, Haratius. *When God's Children Suffer*. Grand Rapids: Kregel Publications, 1992.

Sherman, Doug and William Hendricks. *Your Work Matters To God*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1987.

Endnotes

¹ Walter Bauer, W. F. Arndt, F. W. Gingrich, and F. W. Danker. *A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament And Other Early Christian Literature* 2 ed. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979) p. 693.



“Knowing God’s Will”

“The way to true repentance even in the case of Christians who have sinned and erred is the way of deep grief and sorrow. The mistake made by many a preacher is the endeavor to induce a painless, griefless repentance. Such a repentance does not exist. Peter had to weep bitterly. A broken and a contrite heart is not a pleasant sensation.Much repentance presses out tears. The peaceable fruit of righteousness grows from the pain of chastisement, Heb. 12:11.”¹

R. C. H. LENSKI

“His exhortation to servants is so much the more earnest, on account of the hardship and bitterness of their condition, which renders it more difficult to be endured. And he does not speak merely of outward obedience, but says more about fear willingly rendered; for it is a very rare occurrence to find one who willingly yields himself to the control of another.It can hardly be expected, however, that so much deference will be paid to a mere man, unless a higher authority shall enforce the obligation; and therefore he adds, as doing the will of God (commenting on Ephesians 6:6).”²

JOHN CALVIN

“It is the will of God that believers should walk in purity; that they should look upon the body as devoted to Him.”³

H. A. IRONSIDE

“He draws this conclusion, that persecutions ought to be submissively endured, for the condition of the godly in them is much happier than that of the unbelieving, who enjoy prosperity to their utmost wishes. He, however, reminds us that we suffer nothing except according to the permission of God, which tends much to comfort us; when he says, ‘Let them commit themselves to God,’ it is the same as though he had said, ‘Let them deliver themselves and their life to the safe keeping of God.’”⁴

JOHN CALVIN

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. “Greetings,” he said to them. “Greetings,” he said to him, clasped his feet to him. “Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards’ Report

“While the women with some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money. “You are to say: ‘This during the night and while we were asleep.’ gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it; soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day

Quotes

The Great Commission

“Then the eleven had told them to go. “Then Jesus and said: ‘All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit.’”

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

"Whatever authority the elders have springs from lives of godliness and subjection to the Lord. They are to be examples to the flock, those whom the sheep of Christ may safely follow."⁵

H. A. IRONSIDE

"It is God's pleasure to give wisdom to those who ask in faith, but if we make request in a formal manner without implicit confidence in His readiness to answer we only dishonor Him and so there is no response. To ask in faith necessitates knowing that our petition is in accordance with His will. But we may be assured it is always His desire to impart the necessary wisdom to His people that will enable them to pursue a right course through this scene."⁶

H. A. IRONSIDE

"In this verse [Ps. 119:105] the Psalmist testifies that the Divine Law was his schoolmaster and guide in leading a holy life. He thus, by his own example, prescribes the same rule to us all; for while each of us follows what seems good in our own estimation, we become entangled in inextricable and frightful mazes."⁷

JOHN CALVIN

"But he that hearkeneth unto counsel is wise; that asks advice and takes it of such who are men of age and experience, men of longer standing, and are wiser than himself; who consults the word of God about the right way of walk, worship, and salvation."⁸

JOHN GILL

"...it becomes believers to wait on the Lord for the common blessings of life, for even the eyes of all wait upon him for their daily food; and for the light of his countenance, when it is withdrawn from them, for he will return again at the set time; and for answers of prayer, which will be given sooner or later; and for the performance of his promises, which are yea and amen in Christ .."⁹

JOHN GILL

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely I am with you all the way, to the end of the age." Then he said to them, "Greetings." He went to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. Then Jesus said to them, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will see me, as I promised you."

The Guards' Report

11 While the women were going to the tomb, some of the guards went and reported to the chief priests what had happened. They had devised a plan; they gave the women a large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His disciples came during the night and stole the body while we were asleep.' Then they will go and tell the governor, and we will keep you out of trouble." The soldiers took the money and were instructed. And this story was widely circulated among the Jews every day.

The Great Commission

16 Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they saw him, they worshiped him, but some doubted. Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Now I am sending you out to reach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the very end of the age."

- ¹ R. C. H. Lenski. *II Corinthians in The Interpretation of I and II Corinthians* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1937) pp. 1107-08.
- ² John Calvin. *Ephesians in Calvin's Commentaries* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) pp. 329-30.
- ³ Henry A. Ironside. *I Thessalonians in Philipians - Colossians - Thessalonians* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1982) p. 43.
- ⁴ John Calvin. *I Peter in Calvin's Commentaries* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 141.
- ⁵ Henry A. Ironside. *I Peter in Hebrews - James- Peter* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1982) p. 57.
- ⁶ Henry A. Ironside. *James in Hebrews - James- Peter* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1982) p. 14.
- ⁷ John Calvin. *Psalms 93-150 in Calvin's Commentaries* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 479.
- ⁸ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 4* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 413.
- ⁹ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 3* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 644.



Knowing God's Will

Practical Steps to Find God's Will:

1. Pray for God's Guidance (James 1:5)
2. Carefully Think Through the Decision in Light of Biblical Principles (Psalms 119:105)
3. Think Ahead (Proverbs 16:9)
4. Seek Advice of Older, More Mature Godly Believers (Proverbs 12:15)
5. Wait on the Lord (Psalms 27:14)

God's Will Is Clear in My:

1. Reaction to Sin (II Corinthians 7:8-10)
2. Job (Ephesians 6:5-9)
3. Sexual Life (I Thessalonians 4:1-8)
4. Citizenship (II Peter 2:13-15)
5. Suffering (I Peter 4:12-19)
6. Elders (I Peter 5:1-2)



MANKIND

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

While the women and some of the guards were reported to the chief priests had met and devised a plan, they gave a large sum of money to you, are to say, "This during the night and while we were asleep, go to the governor, we and keep you out of it, soldiers took the money were instructed and the money circulated among the Jews."

The Great Commission

Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee to the mountain, and told them to go. "When they worshiped and bowed, Jesus said to them, "I am with you all days, until the end of the age. Amen."

Stewardship



MATTHEW 27-

...told his disciples
...them. "Greetings."
...him, clasped his

...n. 10Then Jesus sta
...afraid. Go and tell m
...Ga

**After All, It's
Mine! Isn't It?**

...While the women w
...one of the guards we
...ad reported to the chi
...thing that had happen
...and priests had met wit
...vised a plan, they gav
...large sum of money.

...You are to say, 'His
...during the night and
...while we were asleep.'
...ts to the governor, we
...and keep you out of it
...soldiers took the money
...were instructed. And thi
...widely circulated among
...ery day.

What is God's?

...the Great Commission

...16Then the eleven d
...Galilee, to the mount
...had told them to go

...him, they worshiped
...doubted. 18Then Jesus
...and said, "All authori

...on earth has been giv
...fore go and make disc
...ions, baptizing them i

...the Father and of the
...Holy Spirit 20and teach
...ever there I have comm

...the Great Commission



It's my life and I'll do what I want with it! I have my rights! It's my money and I'll spend it the way I want to spend it! It's my talent and I'll do what I want with it! It's my money and I can't afford to give to the Lord and still have enough to meet my needs and desires! "I want what I want when I want it. Not only do I want what I want when I want it, but I have a right to it."¹ Do any of these statements sound familiar? Our culture seems to constantly echo such prideful declarations. I am certainly guilty of stating or at least thinking such things occasionally. Yes, even after my conversion, I maintain some of the attitudes that lead to such expressions of self-centeredness. It was a shocking revelation for me to find out that I really don't "own" anything. It helped me to realize that I am responsible for the proper use and upkeep of those things God has entrusted to me. I am going to held accountable. Thus, it makes me become a better manager of my mind, body, speech, talents, gifts, possessions, etc. We are all God's stewards, and we all have things allotted to us on this earth to manage.



In the Old Testament book of I Chronicles, as David was about to go to the grave, he proclaimed a truth of which we all need to be reminded. He stated, "Yours, O Lord, is the greatness and the power and the glory and the majesty and the splendor, for everything in heaven and earth is yours...." (1 Chron. 29:11a,b - NIV; see also Ps. 24:1; 1 Chron. 29:14). The fact that David makes clear here is that **God owns _____!** That means that anything that we possess is really _____ by God. Not only that, the Bible is clear that we are owned by God as well. Thus, we are stewards or _____ for God of our mind, talents, gifts, possessions, etc. William Bright states, "The steward is not the owner. He does not possess the estate he manages. It is derived property, the ownership of which is vested in another. The true owner has the right to demand an accounting from the one to whom his possessions have been entrusted."² As Ron Blue states, "God has the right to whatever He wants whenever He wants it. It is all His, because an owner has *rights*, and I, as a steward, have only *responsibilities*."³ Since we are all God's stewards, it is important for us to have a good working knowledge of what Christian stewardship is. "Stewardship is the use of _____ resources for the accomplishment of God-given _____."⁴



What Does Our Stewardship

to tell them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met and devised a plan. They gave large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep.' get to the governor, we and keep you out of it. soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven had Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples now baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit." And then

In our work as God's stewards it will be important for us to note some of God's possessions with which we have been entrusted to manage. They include: (1) _____, (2) our _____ and (3) our _____.

1. Stewardship of ourselves (I Cor. 6:19-20).

The first responsibility we want to discuss is that of being managers of ourselves. In Paul's letter to the Corinthian church he stated the following, "Or do you not know that your body is a temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and that you are not your own? For you have been bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body" (I Cor. 6:19-20). The Scripture makes very clear here and in many other passages that as Christians we are God's possession. The highest price was paid for our redemption (Rom. 3:21-26; 1 Peter 1:17-19). As a result, we are called on to be good stewards of ourselves by living a holy life (1 Peter 1:13-16). There are several emphases in Scripture dealing with the stewardship of ourselves. One area of emphasis addressed in Scripture is _____ expression.

The very passage that we quoted to start this section (1 Cor. 6:19-20) is set in the context of Paul addressing the problem of immorality in the Corinthian church (1 Cor. 6:13). The word _____ (Gr. *porneia*) includes incest, homosexuality, "prostitution, unchastity [and] fornication, [and] is used for every kind of unlawful sexual intercourse."⁵ Thus, any type of sexual activity outside of a monogamous, _____ marriage is condemned and is prohibited by the ultimate owner of our bodies, the Holy God. This type of immoral activity is _____ over and over in Scripture (1 Cor. 5:1-5; 6:12-20; 2 Cor. 12:21; Col. 3:5; 1 Thess. 4:3-8, etc.). As God's stewards of our bodies, we are to "flee immorality" (I Cor. 6:18). (See *DEALING WITH TEMPTATION*.)

Another area of our body of which we are called on to be managers is our _____. As God's stewards, the words that we speak should always be honoring to Him. Incredible _____ can come from a "loose" tongue. The Psalmist asks, "Who is the man who desires life, And loves length of days that he may see good?" (Ps. 34:12). His advice is, "Keep your tongue from evil, And your lips from speaking deceit" (Ps. 34:13). James speaks extensively in his epistle of the danger of unguarded speech. He states, "So also the tongue is a small part of the body, and yet it boasts of great things. Behold, how great a forest is set aflame by such a small fire! And the tongue is a fire, the very world of iniquity; the tongue is set among our members as that which defiles the entire body, and sets on fire the course of our life, and is set on fire by hell" (James 3:6). Listed among those things that the Lord considers an _____ in Psalm 6:16-19 are "a lying tongue," "a false witness" and "one who spreads strife among brothers." In addition, Colossians 3:8 tells us to put aside slander and abusive speech.

MATTHEW 27-28

The guarded tongue is a sign of good stewardship of our bodies and a clear sign of _____. James states, ".... If anyone does not stumble in what he says, he is a perfect man, able to bridle the whole body as well" (James 3:2b). Paul gives us good advice in guarding our speech. He writes, "Let no unwholesome word proceed from your mouth, but only such a word as is good for edification according to the need of the moment, that it may give grace to those who hear" (Eph. 4:29). As Christians, our speech should always be honoring to the one who created us and gave us the gift of speech.

One last area on which there is an emphasis in relation to the stewardship of our body is our _____ and _____. Mark 7:21-23 states, "For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed the evil thoughts, fornications, thefts, murders, adulteries, deeds of coveting and wickedness, as well as deceit, sensuality, envy, slander, pride and foolishness. All these evil things proceed from within and defile the man." Here Mark uses the word "heart" to refer to the "center and source of the whole _____ life, with its thinking, feeling and volition."⁶ Since from our mind the corrupt thoughts of the sin nature are conceived, we must, with the power of the Holy Spirit, be good stewards of what we allow to _____ our minds. This will help prevent our minds from being excited toward sin. Paul relates two things to the Philippians that can be helpful in this process. They are prayer and focus. He states, "Be anxious for nothing, but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known to God. And the peace of God, which surpasses all comprehension, shall guard your hearts and your minds in Christ Jesus. Finally, brethren, whatever is true, whatever is honorable, whatever is right, whatever is pure, whatever is lovely, whatever is of good repute, if there is any excellence and if anything worthy of praise, let your mind dwell on these things" (Phil. 4:6-8; cf. 2 Cor. 10:5).

The bottom line in being a good steward of our ourselves is not to be involved in any attitude or action from which the owner of our body has _____ us. We should be "destroying speculations and every lofty thing raised up against the knowledge of God, and we [should be] taking every thought captive to the obedience of Christ" (2 Cor. 10:5). Romans 6:11-13 tells us that we are not to yield our members to sin but to God. As we have stated before, this is possible when we are appropriating the power of the Holy Spirit in our lives.

2. Stewardship of our gifts (1 Pet. 4:10-11).

Peter states in his first epistle, "As each one has received a special gift, employ it in serving one another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God. Whoever speaks, let him speak, as it were, the utterances of God; whoever serves, let him do so as by the strength which God supplies; so that in all things God may be glorified through Jesus Christ, to whom belongs the glory and dominion forever and ever. Amen" (1 Pet. 4:10-11). This makes it clear that each Christian has one or more _____. It is also clear that these are given to each individual "to employ in serving one another" (1 Pet. 4:10; cf. 1 Cor. 12:7, 11). They are not private gifts to be used for personal edification,

although, ministering to the body of Christ by using your gift may result in personal edification.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to them, 'Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brethren that they are to go to Galilee; there they will see me, as I promised them.'"

The Guards' Report

"While the women were going to buy some of the spices, they found the tomb empty and reported to the chief priests what had happened. The chief priests had met with the guards and devised a plan. They gave them a large sum of money, saying, 'You are to say, "The Lord's disciples came during the night and stole away the body while we were asleep." If anyone tells, we will kill you.' So they agreed and kept their word. The soldiers were instructed. And this story has been widely circulated among the Jews every day."

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go. When they worshiped him, they worshiped and doubted. "Then Jesus said to them, 'All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And surely I am with you always, to the end of the age.'"

When we speak of spiritual gifts we speak of "extraordinary powers, distinguishing certain Christians and enabling them to serve the Church of Christ, the reception of which is due to the power of divine grace operating in their souls by the Holy Spirit."⁷ These gifts are _____ given, each one receiving that gift which God chooses him to receive (1 Cor. 12:11, 18). It is also important to remember that spiritual gifts "bestowed in grace, are entirely _____, and their power and operation is due to God alone."⁸ "Because their bestowal is sovereign, it follows that it is not a question of spirituality."⁹ This should be clear from our previous study of *THE SPIRIT-FILLED LIFE*. In addition, a study of the book of 1 Corinthians makes it clear to anyone that someone can possess many spiritual gifts and yet be _____ (1 Cor. 1:7; cf. 1 Cor. 3:1-3). Spiritual gifts are not talents, although we should be good managers of our talents as well and they should be used in a way that God is glorified.

Lists of spiritual gifts are mentioned in Romans 12:6-8; Eph. 4:11; and 1 Cor. 12:8-10, 28-30. John F. Walvoord indicates that there are sixteen spiritual gifts listed in the New Testament. Of these gifts, he lists nine which are "exhibited in gifted men throughout the present dispensation."¹⁰ He states, "There is little doubt that some men today have (1) the gift of teaching, (2) the gift of helping and ministering, (3) the gift of administration or ruling, (4) the gift of evangelism, (5) the gift of being a pastor, (6) the gift of exhortation, (7) the gift of giving, (8) the gift of showing mercy, and (9) the gift of faith."¹¹

There is much difference of opinion among the members of the body of Christ on the remaining gifts which are of a more miraculous nature. The Word of God does not define many of them anywhere and so there has been much speculation on how they were manifested. One thing is sure, historically they all but disappeared from the early church shortly after the first century. God is certainly capable of giving these "sign" gifts in our day, but He seems to have chosen not to do so at this point. The absence of these miraculous "sign" gifts could be tied to the purpose of God for them. As Dr. Walvoord states, "The best explanation of the passing of certain gifts and their manifestation is found in the evident purpose of God in the apostolic age. During the lifetime of the apostles, it pleased God to perform many notable miracles, in some cases quite apart from the question of whether the benefit was deserved. A period of miracles is always a time when special testimony is needed to the authenticity of God's prophets."¹² Since the authenticity of God's prophets can now be tested by the objective truth in the revealed word of God, the "sign" gifts are not needed for that purpose.

To be a good steward of the spiritual gifts God has given us we must first know what they are. Some "spiritual gift tests" are available but most are of little value if you have not been a Christian very long. This is because our gifts usually naturally

surface when we are living an obedient, Spirit-filled life. The best way to determine your spiritual gift(s) is to _____ on the above passages, pray that God would reveal your gift(s) to you, and continue to live out an _____, Spirit-filled life. Your gifts will surface and you will be able to discern what they are. It would be helpful to consult other Christian friends and your family since they may observe your gift(s) before you can discern it. When you know what your spiritual gift is, be diligent "to employ it in serving one another."

3. Stewardship of our possessions (Matt. 6:19-21).

There are probably few areas of the Christian life where we Christians tend to conform to the world more than the way we _____ our possessions. Matthew 16:19-21 states, "Do not lay up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust destroy, and where thieves break in and steal. But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust destroys, and where thieves do not break in or steal; for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." If we are not to make the same mistake the world does by seeking to lay up our treasures here on earth which reflects a _____ as opposed to a _____ perspective, we need to have our focus right. As I mentioned earlier, the focus of a Christian's stewardship is "the use of God-given resources for the accomplishment of God-given goals."¹³ The way we manage our possessions is many times an incredible barometer of our spirituality. Larry Burkett states, "You can tell more about the spiritual lives of a young couple by looking at their checkbook than by anything else."¹⁴

That the Lord is concerned about how we manage our finances is obvious from its emphasis in the New Testament. John MacArthur states, "16 out of 38 of Christ's parables deal with money; more is said in the New Testament about money than heaven and hell combined; five times more is said about money than prayer; and while there are 500 plus verses on both prayer and faith, there are _____ verses dealing with money and possessions."¹⁵ The dangers of the desire to gain great material wealth are described by Paul as he writes to his spiritual child Timothy. He writes, "But those who want to get rich fall into temptation and a snare and many foolish and harmful desires which plunge man into ruin and destruction. For the love of money is a root of all sorts of evil, and some by longing for it have wandered away from the faith, and pierced themselves with many a pang" (1Tim. 6:9-10). The fact is, the love of money is man's striving to find his _____ in something other than God! If we seek God first, He has promised to meet all of our needs (Matt. 6:33; Phil. 4:19).

Wayne Watts in his book *The Gift of Giving* lists several principles that will help us be good stewards of our possessions. They include: (1) plan to be rich in Heaven (Matt. 6:19-21), (2) give to those who minister to you (1 Cor. 9:14; Lk. 10:7; Gal. 6:6), (3) plan for a short life (Job 7:6; James 4:14; Ps. 90:12), (4) make Christ Lord of all, (5) plan ahead to give (1 Cor. 16:1-2), (6) give to your church, (7) invest in people and (8) let God lead.¹⁶ Watts also gives some helpful questions to ask in making a deci-

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "See them. 'Greetings,' he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met and devised a plan. They got large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' get to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ' him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "And he said that they should

sion on giving to a ministry outside your local church. They include: (1) Are they communicating a message true to the Scriptures?, (2) Are people responding positively to the message?, (3) Are the lives of the organization's leaders an illustration of the message [of Scripture]?, (4) Is the organization [or church] reproducing itself?, and (5) Is there a standard of excellence along with freedom from waste?¹⁷ In fact, I think these are good questions to ask about the church you are attending also.

One common _____ in Christian thinking is that our responsibility to be good stewards of our possessions, whether material or monetary, is fulfilled if we give a certain percentage to our church every week. We need to remember that since God owns it all, every use of our finances is a _____ decision. We should try to maintain a _____ to make sure that we are being wise stewards of the finances God has given us. Some excellent books have been written in recent years on this subject and are listed in the "Suggested Reading" section. We should also always seek opportunities to allow our possessions to be used for God's glory whether it be houses, land, etc.

We have been given incredible responsibility as stewards of God's possessions. When the Lord returns, may we be found faithful in the stewardship He has entrusted to us (Matt. 25:23).



Summary

First Chronicles 29:11, as well as many other Scriptures, makes it clear that God owns it all! That means that anything we possess is really owned by God. Not only that, the Bible is clear that we are owned by God as well. Thus, we are stewards or managers for God of our mind, talents, gifts, possessions, etc. Since we are all God's stewards, it is important for us to have a good working knowledge of what Christian stewardship is. "Stewardship is the use of God-given resources for the accomplishment of God-given goals." In our work as God's stewards it will be important for us to note the major areas of God's possessions with which we have been entrusted to manage. They include: (1) ourselves, (2) our gifts and (3) our possessions.

We are called on to be good stewards of ourselves through living a holy life (1 Peter 1:13-16). Thus, any type of sexual activity outside of a monogamous, heterosexual marriage is condemned and is prohibited by the ultimate owner of our bodies, the Holy God. Another area of our body of which we are called on to be managers is our tongue. As God's stewards, the words that we speak should always be honoring to Him. Incredible destruction can come from a "loose" tongue. One last area on which there is an emphasis in relation to the stewardship of our bodies is our

heart and mind. Since from our mind the corrupt thoughts of the sin nature are conceived, we must, with the power of the Holy Spirit, be good stewards of what we allow to enter our minds.

Scripture is clear that each Christian has one or more spiritual gifts. It is also clear that these were given to each individual "to employ in serving one another" (1 Pet. 4:10; cf. 1 Cor. 12:7, 11). These are not private gifts to be used for personal edification, although, ministering to the body of Christ by using your gift may result in personal edification. The best way to determine your spiritual gift(s) is to meditate on the passages listing the spiritual gifts, pray that God would reveal your gift(s) to you, and continue to live out an obedient, Spirit-filled life. Your gifts will surface and you will be able to discern what they are. It would be helpful to consult other Christian friends and your family, since they may observe your gift before you can discern it. When you know what your spiritual gift is, be diligent "to employ it in serving one another."

There are probably few areas of the Christian life where we Christians tend to conform to the world more than the way we handle our possessions. One common fallacy in Christian thinking is that our responsibility of being good stewards of our possessions, whether material or monetary, is fulfilled if we give a certain percentage to our church every week. We need to remember that since God owns it all, every use of our finances is a spiritual decision.

We have been given incredible responsibility as stewards of God's possessions. When the Lord returns, may we be found faithful in the stewardship He has entrusted to us (Matt. 25:23).



Test Your Knowledge

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "So to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards Report

"While the women with some of the guards we had reported to the chief priests had met with a plan, they got a large sum of money. "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it. soldiers took the money we were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped, doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to you, and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you. And I will be with you and I will be with you until the end of the age. Amen."

1. First Chronicles 29:11, as well as many other Scriptures make it clear that God owns _____! That means that anything we possess is really _____ by God.
2. We are stewards or _____ for God of our mind, talents, gifts, possessions, etc.
3. In our work as God's stewards it will be important for us to note the major areas of God's possessions with which we have been entrusted to manage. They include: (1) _____, (2) our _____ and (3) our _____.
4. Any type of sexual activity outside of a monogamous, _____ marriage is condemned and is prohibited by the ultimate owner of our bodies, the Holy God.
5. As God's stewards, the words that we speak should always be honoring to Him. Incredible _____ can come from a "loose" tongue.
6. Listed among those things that the Lord considers an _____ in Psalm 6:16-19 are "a lying tongue," "a false witness" and "one who spreads strife among brothers."
7. Since from our mind the corrupt thoughts of the sin nature are conceived, we must, with the power of the Holy Spirit, be good stewards of what we allow to _____ our minds. This will help prevent our minds from being excited toward sin.
8. Spiritual gifts are _____ given, each one receiving that gift which God chooses him to receive (1 Cor. 12:11, 18). It is also important to remember that spiritual gifts "bestowed in grace, are entirely _____, and their power and operation is due to God alone."
9. The best way to determine your spiritual gift(s) is to _____ on the passages listing spiritual gifts, pray that God would reveal your gift(s) to you, and continue to live out an _____, Spirit-filled life.
10. If we are not to make the same mistake the world does by seeking to lay up our treasures here on earth which reflects a _____ as opposed to a _____ perspective, we need to have our focus right.
11. The fact is, the love of money is man's striving to find his _____ in something other than God!
12. One common _____ in Christian thinking is that our responsibility to be

good stewards of our possessions, whether material or monetary, is fulfilled if we give a certain percentage to our church every week. We need to remember that since God owns it all, every use of our finances is a _____ decision.

Suggested Reading

Blue, Ron. *Master Your Money*. rev. Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1991.

Burkett, Larry. *The Complete Financial Guide For Young Couples*. Wheaton: Victor Books, 1993.

_____. *How To Manage Your Money*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1982.

_____. *The Financial Planning Workbook*. Chicago: Moody Press, 1982.

Watts, Wayne. *The Gift of Giving*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1982.

Bridges, Jerry. *The Pursuit of Holiness*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1978.

_____. *The Practice of Godliness*. Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1983.

Endnotes

¹ Ron Blue. *Master Your Money* rev.

(Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1991) p. 17.

² William R. Bright. ed. *Teacher's Manual for the Ten Basic Steps Toward Christian Maturity*

(San Bernardino: Campus Crusade For Christ, Int., 1965) p. 375.

³ Blue., *Ibid.*, p. 20.

⁴ *Ibid.*, p. 23.

⁵ Walter Bauer, W. F. Arndt, F. W. Gingrich, and F. W. Danker. *A Greek-English Lexicon Of The New Testament And Other Early Christian Literature* 2 ed. (Chicago: University of Chicago Press, 1979) p. 693.

⁶ *Ibid.*, p. 403.

⁷ J. H. Thayer. *Greek-English Lexicon of the New Testament* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1977) p. 667.

⁸ John F. Walvoord. *The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1991) p. 164.

⁹ *Ibid.*, p. 165.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, p. 168.

¹¹ *Ibid.*, p. 168.

¹² *Ibid.*, p. 173.

¹³ Blue., *Ibid.*, p. 23.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "See them. 'Greetings,' he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women with some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happen chief priests had met with devised a plan. **Quotes** large sum of money. "You are to say. "His during the night and while we were asleep" gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And the widely circulated among very day

The Great Commission

"Then in eleven d Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. " him; they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make discip- tions baptizing them in the Father's name

¹⁴ Larry Burkett. *The Complete Financial Guide For Young Couples* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1993) p. 19.
¹⁵ As quoted by Ron Blue. *Master Your Money* rev. (Nashville: Thomas Nelson Publishers, 1991) p. 19.
¹⁶ Wayne Watts. *The Gift of Giving*. (Colorado Springs: Navpress, 1982) pp. 73-82.
¹⁷ *Ibid.*, p. 84.



Stewardship

"...for all that is in heaven and in the earth is thine.' They are both made by him, and all that is in them, and therefore he has the sole right unto them." ¹

JOHN GILL

"You are not your own, you do not belong to your own selves. As the Spirit's sanctuary we belong wholly to him, and that certainly includes also our body, so that this body itself can be called his sanctuary." ²

R. C. H. LENSKI

"...for by saying that he who offends not with his tongue is perfect, he intimates that the restraining of the tongue is a great virtue, and one of the chief virtues." ³

JOHN CALVIN

"If (there be) any virtue and if (there be) any praise, be thinking about these things.' Nothing that is really worthwhile for believers to ponder and take into consideration is omitted from this summarizing phrase. Anything at all that is a matter of moral and spiritual excellence, so that it is the proper object of praise, is the right pasture for the Christian mind to graze in." ⁴

WILLIAM HENDRIKSEN

"As 1 Corinthians 13 bears witness, spiritual gifts to be profitable must be used in love. Spiritual gifts in themselves do not make great Christians. Their use in the proper way motivated by divine love, which is the fruit of the Spirit, is effective and bears fruit to the glory of God." ⁵

JOHN F. WALVOORD

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

"Each [Christian] is responsible to use the gift he has received to minister for the blessing of the rest, 'as good stewards of the grace of God.' A good steward is held accountable to fulfill faithfully the trust committed to him by his master."⁶

H. A. IRONSIDE

"According to the scriptural use of the word, a gift is a ministry of the indwelling Spirit performing a service and using the believer as an instrument."⁷

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

"Gifts are bestowed that the servant of God may be 'profitable' (1 Cor. 12:7), and it is therefore implied that service which is wrought in the energy of the flesh is not profitable. The Spirit's manifestation in the exercise of a gift is as 'rivers of living water' (John 7:37-39) and is the realization of those 'good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them' (Eph. 2:10)."⁸

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

"If a person loves God he will show this by being devoted to him, placing everything — money, time, talents, etc. — at his disposal, serving him. It is clear, therefore, that loving God is not merely a matter of the emotions but of heart, soul, mind, and strength (Matt. 22:37; Mark 12:30)."⁹

WILLIAM HENDRIKSEN

"'For we brought nothing into this world.' Which is the reason both clearly shewing that godliness is great gain, since those who have it brought nothing into the world with them but sin, and yet are now in such happy circumstances as before described; and that godly persons should be content with what they have, even of worldly things, seeing they are so much more than they had when they came into the world, into which they came naked."¹⁰

JOHN GILL

"Over against the Gentiles, who crave food, drink, garments, etc., Christ's followers are urged to seek first his kingdom and his righteousness. The verb seek implies a being absorbed in the search for, a persevering and strenuous effort to obtain (cf. 13:45). The form of the verb that is used also allows the rendering, 'Be constantly seeking' (cf. Col. 3:1)."¹¹

WILLIAM HENDRIKSEN

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greet them," he said to him, "clasped his feet on him." "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women and some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met and devised a plan. They got large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep' go to the governor, 'and keep you out of it soldiers took the money.' 'I am not' and the by circulated among the

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven, Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. 'I him the worshiped said.' "Then Jesus, and said, 'All authority on earth has been given to me, and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the

- ¹ John Gill. *Exposition of the Old & New Testaments Vol. 3* (Paris: The Baptist Standard Bearer, Inc., 1989) p. 46.
- ² R. C. H. Lenski. *I Corinthians in The Interpretation of I and II Corinthians* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1937) p. 270.
- ³ John Calvin. *James in Calvin's Commentaries* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 319.
- ⁴ William Hendriksen. *Philippians, Colossians and Philemon* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1979) p. 199.
- ⁵ John F. Walvoord. *The Holy Spirit* (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1991) p. 167.
- ⁶ Henry A. Ironside. *Peter in Hebrews - James - Peter* (Neptune: Loizeaux Brothers, Inc., 1982) p. 50.
- ⁷ Lewis S. Chafer. *Major Bible Themes* rev. John F. Walvoord (Grand Rapids: Zondervan Publishing House, 1974) pp. 250-51.
- ⁸ *Ibid.*, p. 251.
- ⁹ William Hendriksen. *The Gospel of Matthew* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1973) p. 348.
- ¹⁰ Gill. *Ibid.*, Vol. 9, p. 310.
- ¹¹ Hendriksen. *Ibid.*, p. 354.



The Church



MATTHEW 27

all his disciples.
him. "Greetings."
him clasped his
"Then Jesus sa
fraid. Go and tell m

Me A Part Of The Body?

While the women w
e of the guards we
d reported to the chi
ing that had happen
ed priests had met wit
ed a plan. they gav
e sum of money.
you are to say. "His
ing the night and
le we were asleep."

What Is The Church?

the Great Commission
"Then the eleven d
ilee, to the mount.
I told them to go
m. they worshiped
abated. "Then Jesus
I said, "All authori
earth has been givr
are go and make disc
ons. baptizing them
Father and of the
rk spirit. "and teach

As we discussed in *THE SPIRIT-FILLED LIFE*, we are all gifted and our gift is needed in our local church. Imagine an Olympic runner trying to win a gold medal in the 100 meters with only half of his muscles and you will have a good picture of how effective the church is without you doing your part. Paul states in his letter to the believers in Corinth, *"For even as the body is one and yet has many members, and all the members of the body, though they are many, are one body, so also is Christ. ...But now God has placed the members, each one of them, in the body, just as He desired"* (1 Cor. 12:12, 18). Here Paul compares the Church to a physical body. In 1 Corinthians chapter 12 he makes the point that just as the body has need of all of its parts to function properly, the local church also has need of all of its members taking part in the ministry to function properly. Each one of us is a vital member of our local church and our gifts are needed for the body to function at the level to which Christ meant it.



"And I also say to you that you are Peter, and upon this rock I will build My church; and the gates of Hades shall not overpower it" (Matt. 16: 18). This was Jesus' response to Peter's statement that He was *"the Christ, the Son of the living God"* (Matt. 16:16). Here Christ made a prophetic proclamation that at some time in the future He would build His Church. But what is *"the church"*? The Greek term used in our New Testament is _____. It is a compound word from *ek*, which means *"out of"* and *kaleo*, which means *"to call."* Thus, the term literally means *"a called out group."* The word was originally used for any kind of group but started to take on a technical sense especially in Acts and the Epistles *"to designate the New Testament church, a group of called-out believers in Jesus Christ."*¹ On the day of Pentecost the Holy Spirit was sent (Acts 4:1-4) and for the first time He took up _____ in all believers. This was the birth of the Church. This ministry of indwelling each believer occurs at _____ when the Spirit identifies us with Christ and His body (1 Cor. 12:13).



The Church - Local or Universal?

to tell them "Greetings," he s to him clasped his feet him. 10Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they wil

The Guards' Report

11While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they go large sum of money.

"You are to say, 'His during the night and whole What Are The Functions of The Local Church?"

The Great Commission

16Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. 17 him, they worshiped doubted. 18Then Jesus and said, "All authorit on earth has been givel fore go and make disc tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, 20and teach ever where I have comm

"The most common use of the word church in the New Testament is to designate a group of believers that are identified as a _____ assembly or congregation (Acts 8:1; 11:2; Rom. 16:5; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Cor. 1:1; Gal. 1:2; 1 Thess. 1:1; Philemon 2)."² The local church is thus a group of believers gathered together in a specific locality. The _____ church, on the other hand, is "all those who, in this age, have been born of the Spirit of God and have by the same Spirit been baptized into [_____ with] the Body of Christ (1 Cor. 12:13; 1 Pet. 1:3, 22-25)"³ As Paul Enns states, "It was this corporate group of believers that Christ promised to build (Matt. 16:18); it was this Body for whom Christ died (Eph. 5:25), and He is the head over it, giving it direction (Eph. 1:22-23; Col. 1:8)... A particular emphasis of the universal church is its unity, whether Jews or Gentiles, all together compose one body, in a unity produced by the Holy Spirit (Gal. 3:28; Eph. 4:4)."⁴ Thus, the New Testament teaches a universal church, of which all born-again believers from Pentecost to Christ's return are a part, and it also teaches that this universal church is manifest around the world through the local church, a group of believers gathered together in a specific locality.



There are several elements that distinguish a local assembly as a New Testament church. They include: 1) _____, 2) _____ worship, 3) ordinances, and 4) _____.

1. Organization

A distinct structure is seen as one studies the New Testament in relation to the local church. In Acts 14:23, we see that after Paul and Barnabas had preached the gospel in Lystra, Iconium and Antioch, they returned to those cities and "appointed elders for them in every church" (See also Tit. 1:5). The term "elder" (Gr. *presbuteros*) is used synonymously with the terms "overseer" ["bishop" in KJV] (Gr. *episkopos*) and "pastor" (Gr. *poimen*) (cf. Acts 20:17, 28 and Titus 1:5, 7; also cf. Eph. 4:11, "pastor-teacher" or literally "shepherd-teacher" with Acts 20:28 and I Peter 5:1-2 where the verb "shepherding" is used). The churches were always led by a group of _____ and these men were chosen on the basis of very clear criteria (I Tim. 3:1-7; Titus 1:5-9). It is the primary responsibility of the elders to "nurture and _____ the flock entrusted to .. [them] (cf. Acts 20:28; 1 Tim. 3:2; Tit. 1:7)."⁵

In addition, we see another office developed in the New Testament called the "deacon" or better "_____." The term deacon is simply a transliteration of the Greek word *diakonos* which literally means "servant." This office probably found its beginning in Acts 6 where the feeding of the widows was being neglected, because at that time the job had become overwhelming for the apostles who led the church in its infancy. To keep them from "neglecting the Word of God" seven men who would be faithful in ministering to the material needs of the needy in the

MATTHEW 27-28

church were chosen by the congregation. This was probably the beginning of what later developed into the office of deacon (I Tim. 3:8-13). Again, the deacons or servants are selected on the basis of clear criteria (I Tim. 3:8-13). A simple distinction between these two offices is that the elders or pastors take care of the _____ and instruction of the flock, and the deacons care for the _____ needs of the congregation.

2. Worship

"Our Lord revealed two basics about true worship when He declared it must be in spirit and truth [Jn. 4:24]. 'In spirit' includes three things about the center of worship. (1) Worship can and should take place _____ and everywhere since spirit is not confined to a particular place or time. (2) Worship comes from man's spirit (Heb. 4:12). It is no mere surface ritual. (3) True worship is a person-to-person experience, honoring with our spirit God who was revealed through the Lord Jesus at all times and in all places. 'In truth' means that the character of true worship must be genuine and without pretense. God hates _____ worship (Isa. 1:10-17; Mal. 1:7-14; Matt. 15:8-9). Fake worship is that which is not in accord with the revealed Word of God. Therefore, to worship in truth necessitates a growing knowledge of the Word which will also increase our appreciation for the worth of the God we worship."⁶

But what about corporate worship. What is involved in corporate worship?

a. Teaching

As we have already observed, the apostles saw the neglecting of the teaching of the Word as something they could not afford to do (Acts 6:2). Since the very early days of the Church instruction in the _____ truths of God's Word has been seen as extremely important (Acts 2:42). We have already discussed the importance of the "renewing of our mind" in being able to walk in obedience (Rom. 12:2). One of the pastor-teacher's primary responsibilities is to equip "*the saints for the work of the service for the building up of the body of Christ.*" The maturity, doctrinal discernment, and effectiveness of each believer within the body depends on this teaching (Eph. 4:13-16). "All of the _____ demonstrate the kind of teaching that must have been customary in the churches and these include all aspects of doctrinal teaching with application."⁷

If we are going to be instructed then we should go to church with our Bible, pad and pen in hand to record and study what we learn. How many of us go to school without our textbooks, paper and pen? How much more should we be diligently studying from the Book of eternal wisdom?

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet and kissed them. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met with devised a plan, they got large sum of money. 'You ate to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of the soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. "I him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit, "and teach everything I have commanded you to do."

b. Prayer

Prayer should be an intricate part of the corporate worship of the local church. "Prayer was practiced both individually and corporately (Acts 4:24; 6:4; 10:9; 12:5; 13:3; 1 Tim. 2:1-8)."⁸ We should all learn to take part in prayer in corporate worship. The fear for many of us is that our prayer will not sound sophisticated enough or it will not be as beautiful or insightful as the prayer of someone else. Remind yourself that prayer is talking to God and that the prayer is not to instruct someone else or to gain their approval; it is to communicate your _____ to God. This will relieve some of the fear associated with praying in corporate worship. The many facets involved in prayer were discussed in *PRAYER LIFE*. It might be good to go back and review those at this point.

c. Singing

"The New Testament exhorts both private and public singing as a facet of worship. When one is happy he should sing (James 5:13). Paul and Silas sang hymns of praise in _____ (Acts 16:25). _____ was part of corporate worship as well (1 Cor. 14:26, this was likely a solo; Col. 3:16). Though distinctions have been made between psalms, hymns and spiritual songs, they cannot be held rigidly. Psalms possibly refers to Old Testament psalms, though perhaps with Christians' additions. Hymns may be praises directed to God (yet might include using psalms, Acts 16:25). Spiritual songs may include a wider variety of themes. Music is an important part of worship in most churches today."⁹

All of us can sing from the joy in our heart of knowing Christ as our Savior and His constant goodness toward us. Although all of us may not have wonderful singing voices, we should all be involved in the singing in corporate worship and those more talented in music and singing should be using those talents for the Lord in the corporate worship of the Body and as a witness in other arenas of society.

d. Giving

We have already briefly discussed giving in our chapter on *STEWARDSHIP*. Now we will discuss giving in relation to the church more specifically. "The New Testament says more about _____ than about any other single aspect of church life. Giving to others serves as clear proof of one's _____ for God (James 2:15-17; 1 John 3:17-18), should stem from a life that has first been given to Him (2 Cor. 8:5), should be done voluntarily ([1 Cor. 8]:11-12; 9:7), liberally even in poverty ([1 Cor. 8:]:12), cheerfully (9:7), and according to the measure of _____ God gives to the individual (1 Cor. 16:2). As far as the New Testament revelation is concerned, giving was the principal area in which there was a cooperative effort among a number of churches (Acts 11:27-30; 2 Cor. 8,9)."¹⁰

We should all be giving _____ and _____ to support the work of our church, missions, and those in need.

MATTHEW 27-28

e. Fellowship

"The early church continued in fellowship (Acts 2:42). This means they had a close _____ with each other (emphasis mine). This closeness consisted of their common doctrinal allegiance, their willingness to share material things, the experience of Communion in the Lord's Supper, and in sharing prayers. In other words, all the aspects of worship constitute fellowship. It is not a separate entity that exists itself. It is practice of corporate worship. Based on the illustration of 1 Cor. 12, it may be called body life. But based on the illustration of

Ephesians 2, it may just as well be called household life. The goal, whatever the label, is to increase the health, strength, commitment, and numbers of the body or household (Eph. 4:12-17)."¹¹

As we can see from the above explanation, " _____ " goes far beyond the superficial greeting, conversation, meeting together for Sunday service, and post-service meal (commonly referred to as "fellowship"). Fellowship can certainly include this but an additional critical aspect is the day to day commitment to a loving, caring _____ toward our brothers and sisters in Christ. This is an aspect in which we should all be involved.

3. Ordinances

"An ordinance might simply be defined as 'an outward rite prescribed by Christ to be performed by His church.'"¹² The ordinances of the Church are baptism and the Lord's supper.

a. Baptism

"And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, 'All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age'" (Matt. 28:18-20). Shortly before Christ ascended to Heaven He gave this command to His disciples. "In the origination of this ordinance there is a particular order established; the first act was to _____, then those disciples were to be _____. This is the pattern that is carried out in the book of Acts. Peter commanded that his hearers should first repent, then be baptized (Acts 2:38). Only those who heard the gospel, understood and responded to it through faith and repentance, could be baptized. The result was that the people received the Word, then were baptized (Acts 2:41)."¹³

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Smile at them. 'Greetings' be sent to him; he has clasped his feet about you." ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met and devised a plan. They got large sum of money. 'You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it; soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. To him, they worshiped, doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, 'All authority on earth has been given to Me; go and make disciples, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the

_____ is an outward sign of an inward change. The Greek verb *baptizo* literally means "to dip or immerse" thus the mode of baptism should be immersion. This immersion "best pictures the significance of baptism which is death to the old life and resurrection to the new (Rom. 6:1-4)."¹⁴

b. The Lord's Supper

"And when He had taken a cup and given thanks, He said, 'Take this and share it among yourselves; for I say to you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine from now on until the kingdom of God comes.' And when He had taken some bread and given thanks, He broke it, and gave it to them, saying, 'This is My body which is given for you; do this in remembrance of Me.' And in the same way He took the cup after they had eaten, saying, 'This cup which is poured out for you is the new covenant in My blood' "(Lk. 22:17-20). "Christ instituted the Lord's Supper on the eve of His crucifixion, commanding that His followers continue to observe it until His return (Matt. 26:26-29; Mark 14:22-25; Luke 22:14-23). This was a new covenant or testament in contrast with the old Mosaic covenant. To enact the covenant, death was necessary because death provided forgiveness of sins. Paul also rehearsed the ordinance for the Corinthian church (1 Cor. 11:23-32)."¹⁵

The observation of the Lord's supper is a _____. "It is a memorial to His death (1 Cor. 11:24, 25): the recurring statement, 'in remembrance of me,' makes it clear, the bread symbolizing His perfect body offered in sin-bearing sacrifice (1 Pet. 2:24) and the wine His blood shed for forgiveness of sins (Eph. 1:7). It is a proclamation of the death of Christ while waiting for His coming (1 Cor. 11:26): it involves a looking back to the historical event of the cross and an anticipating of His return in the future (Matt. 26:29). It is a communion of believers with each other (1 Cor. 10:17): they eat and drink the same symbolic elements, focusing on their common faith in Christ."¹⁶

4. Ministry

The ministry of the church is in two main arenas; ministry within the church family (which we covered under corporate worship) and ministry outside the body to the unsaved world.

"And Jesus came up and spoke to them, saying, 'All authority has been given to Me in heaven and on earth. 'Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit, teaching them to observe all that I commanded you; and lo, I am with you always, even to the end of the age' " (Matt. 28:18-20). This is the central commission of the Church of Jesus Christ. This commission was not just given to church leaders but is the _____ body's responsibility! If we are followers of Christ, we are responsible to do our part in fulfilling the Great Commission! This means we should _____ make evangelism and follow-up instruction part of our lifestyle. Evangelism should not be a program but rather a _____ . In our everyday life, by our conduct and attitudes, we should

be a living example of God's grace. We are called to be the salt of the earth and the light of the world (Matt. 5:13; Phil. 2:15) and "believers are to make known God's righteous requirements of man and the need for repentance and regeneration."¹⁷



As a believer in Christ Jesus you are a part of the body of Christ. This means that you have gifts that are important to the proper functioning of the body and that God has chosen you to be His witness in your sphere of influence. You are not insignificant or second-class in Christ's body. To be effective within the local body and in your sphere of influence (school, family, job, etc.) you need to be _____. The *DAILY TIME WITH GOD* will be important in this equipping process as well as the teaching and fellowship you receive in your local church. As you mature you will start to be able to discern your _____ and fill specific needs in your local church. You will also be an incredible witness as your attitudes and actions change and it becomes evident to everyone that something significant has happened in your life. Divine appointments to share your faith will naturally develop and as you lead people to Christ you will have the opportunity to ground them in truth as someone is doing with you right now through this curriculum. The process will never stop. It must not stop!



Summary

The Greek term used in our New Testament translated "church" is *ekklesia*. It is a compound word from *ek*, which means "out of" and *kaleo*, which means "to call." Thus, the term literally means "a called out group." The word was originally used for any kind of group but started to take on a technical sense especially in Acts and the Epistles "to designate the New Testament church, a group of called-out believers in Jesus Christ." "The most common use of the word church in the New Testament is to designate a group of believers that are identified as a local assembly or congregation (Acts 8:1; 11:2; Rom. 16:5; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Cor. 1:1; Gal. 1:2; 1 Thess. 1:1; Philemon 2)." The local church is thus a group of believers gathered together in a specific locality. The universal church, on the other hand, is "all those who, in this age, have been born of the Spirit of God and have by the same Spirit been baptized into [identified with] the Body of Christ (1 Cor. 12:13; 1 Pet. 1:3, 22-25)." There are several elements that distinguish a local assembly as a New Testament church. They include: 1) organization, 2) corporate worship, 3) ordinances, and 4) ministry. The New Testament teaches two distinct offices in the organization of the early church. The two offices are the elder (overseer or bishop) or pastor-teacher and the deacon or servant. A simple distinction between these two offices is that the elders or

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Surely, 'Greetings,' he said to him, clasped his feet to him. "Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

"While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened chief priests had met with devised a plan. they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of it soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go of him, they worshiped doubted. "Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given to me, and make disciples baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. "Then Jesus

pastors take care of the teaching and instruction of the flock, whereas the deacons care for the material needs of the congregation. Corporate worship in the local church includes teaching, prayer, singing, giving and fellowship. The ordinances of the church include baptism and the Lord's supper. The ministry of the church is in two main arenas: ministry within the church family and ministry outside the body to the unsaved world. In our everyday life, by our conduct and attitudes, we should be a living example of God's grace. In our ministry to the unsaved world, we are called to be the salt of the earth and the light of the world (Matt. 5:13; Phil. 2:15) and "believers are to make known God's righteous requirements of man and the need for repentance and regeneration."

As believers in Christ Jesus we are a part of the body of Christ. This means that we have gifts that are important to the proper functioning of the body and that God has chosen us to be His witness in our sphere of influence.

**Test Your Knowledge**

1. The Greek term _____ translated "church" in the New Testament, was originally used for any kind of group but started to take on a technical sense especially in Acts and the Epistles "to designate the New Testament church, a group of called-out believers in Jesus Christ."
2. "The most common use of the word church in the New Testament is to designate a group of believers that are identified as a _____ assembly or congregation (Acts 8:1; 11:2; Rom. 16:5; 1 Cor. 1:2; 2 Cor. 1:1; Gal. 1:2; 1 Thess. 1:1; Philemon 2)."
3. The _____ church is "all those who, in this age, have been born of the Spirit of God and have by the same Spirit been baptized into [_____ with] the Body of Christ (1 Cor. 12:13; 1 Pet. 1:3, 22-25)."
4. There are several elements that distinguish a local assembly as a New Testament church. They include: 1) _____, 2) _____ worship, 3) ordinances, and 4) _____.
5. God hates _____ worship (Isa. 1:10-17; Mal. 1:7-14; Matt. 15:8-9).
6. The New Testament teaches two distinct offices in the organization of the early church. The two offices are the _____ (overseer or bishop) or pastor-teacher and the deacon or _____.
7. A simple distinction between these two offices is that the elders or pastors take care of the _____ and instruction of the flock; the deacons care for the _____ needs of the congregation.

8. Remind yourself that prayer is talking to God and that prayer is not to instruct someone else or to gain their approval; it is to communicate your _____ to God.
9. The observation of the Lord's supper is a _____. "It is a memorial to His death (1 Cor. 11:24, 25): the recurring statement, 'in remembrance of me,' makes it clear, the bread symbolizing His perfect body offered in sin-bearing sacrifice (1 Pet. 2:24) and the wine His blood shed for forgiveness of sins (Eph. 1:7).
10. The ministry of the church is in two main arenas: ministry _____ the church family and ministry outside the body to the _____ world.
11. As believers in Christ Jesus we are a part of the _____ of Christ. This means that we have gifts that are important to the proper functioning of the body and that God has chosen us to be His witness in our _____ of influence.

Suggested Reading

MacArthur, John Jr. *Body Dynamics*. Wheaton: Victor Books, 1982.

Getz, Gene A. *The Measure of a Church*. Glendale: Regal Books, 1975.

Chafer, L. S. *Ecclesiology in Systematic Theology Vol. IV*. Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1948. (This provides an in-depth doctrinal study of the Church.)

Endnotes

¹ Paul Enns. *The Moody Handbook of Theology* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1989) p. 347.

² Ibid., p. 348.

³ Henry C. Thiessen. *Lectures in Systematic Theology*. rev. Vernon D. Doerksen (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1979) p. 307.

⁴ Enns. *ibid.*, p. 348.

⁵ Ibid., p. 355.

⁶ Charles C. Ryrie. *Basic Theology*. (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1987) pp. 428-29.

⁷ Ibid., p. 429.

⁸ Ibid., p. 429.

⁹ Ibid., pp. 429-30.

¹⁰ Ibid., p. 430.

¹¹ Ibid., p. 420.

¹² Enns. *Ibid.*, p. 359.

¹³ Ibid., pp. 362-63.

¹⁴ Ryrie. *Ibid.*, p. 424.

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Sud them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

Quotes
¹¹While the some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been giver fore go and make disci- tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach everything I have comm andly I am with you al

¹⁵ Enns. Ibid., p 360.

¹⁶ Ibid., p. 362.

¹⁷ Thiessen. Ibid., p. 332.



"The Church"

"The true church, composed of the whole number of regenerate persons from Pentecost to the first resurrection (1 Cor. 15:52), united together and to Christ by the baptism of the Holy Spirit (1 Cor. 12:12,13), is the body of Christ of which He is the Head (Eph. 1:22,23). As such, it is a holy temple for the habitation of God through the Spirit (Eph. 2:21, 22); is 'one flesh' with Christ (Eph. 5:30, 31); and espoused to Him as a chaste virgin to one husband (2 Cor. 11:2-4)."¹

C. I. SCOFIELD

"The New Testament word for church is ekklesia, which means 'assembly' and is from a verb meaning 'to call out.' Christians are called apart from the world to exist as an entity. They are to lead a life worthy of His calling (Eph. 4:1), so that they become in character and conduct what they are by virtue of their union with Christ....The Church is the company of God's people, called out to live for Him."²

JOHN MACARTHUR JR.

"Ekklesia also designates the universal church. In this usage the concept of a physical assembly gives way to the spiritual unity of all believers in Christ. Ekklesia in this sense is not the assembly itself but rather those constituting it; they are the church whether actually assembled or not."³

ROBERT L. SAUCY

"...in the New Testament episkopos and presbuteros, 'overseer' and 'elder,' are titles for the same office and the same officeholder; he is called 'overseer' in consideration of the work to be done, 'elder' in consideration of the dignity. The latter word was borrowed from the synagogue which also had its 'elders.'"⁴

R. C. H. LENSKI

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

"The function of the office of deacon is not clear in Scripture, but it appears that it had to do with the administering of relief funds. The elders were responsible for the spiritual needs of the community of the faithful and the deacons cared primarily for the physical needs. The qualifications for those holding this office are similar to those of the elder, except that the requirements concerning the ability to teach and hospitality, though mentioned for the elder, are not required for a deacon."⁵

HENRY C. THIESSEN

"Centrality of the Word. The importance of the Word in the midst of the church appears in the report of the early believers that they were 'continually devoting themselves to the apostles' teaching' (Ac. 2:42, NASB). As Israel's worship began with hearing God (cf. Deut. 6:4), so church worship begins with listening to the voice of God through His Word, for it is in His Word that God comes to His people, to address them, and hold conversation with them. Through the Word the obedience of faith is engendered (Rom. 10:17; Jn. 17:20) and life is transformed (Jn. 17:17; 15:3)."⁶

ROBERT L. SAUCY

"Now no sacrifice is pleasing to God, if it is not voluntary. For when he teaches us, that God loveth a cheerful giver, he intimates that, on the other hand, the niggardly and reluctant are loathed by Him. For He does not wish to lord it over us, in the manner of a tyrant, but, as He acts towards us as a Father, so he requires from us the cheerful obedience of children."⁷

JOHN CALVIN

"Several New Testament passages may contain parts of hymns that the early church used (Eph. 5:14; 1 Tim. 3:16). The many doxologies also underscore this important aspect of worship (Rom. 9:5; 11:33-36; 16:27; Phil. 4:20; 1 Tim. 6:16; 2 Tim. 4:18)."⁸

CHARLES C. RYRIE

"As a human body has connected tissues, muscles, bones, ligaments, and organs, the Body of Christ is comprised of members who are responsible to one another. No member exists detached from the rest of the Body, any more than lungs can lie on the floor in the next room and keep a person breathing. The health of the Body, its witness, and its testimony are dependent on all members faithfully ministering to one another."⁹

JOHN MACARTHUR

Quotes

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Sue them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they got large sum of money. "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers took the money were instructed. And thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been giver fore go and make disc tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everything I have comm

"The ordinance of baptism is a symbol of the believer's identification with Christ in his death, burial, and resurrection (Rom. 6:3f; Col. 2:12; 1 Pet. 3:21). In baptism the believer testifies that he was in Christ when Christ was judged for sin, that he was buried with him, and that he has arisen to new life in him. "¹⁰

HENRY THIESSEN

"The very elements of the rite and the words of institution emphasize the communion as a remembrance of the death of Christ. This is not to overlook the fact that it is a 'remembrance of me,' that is, of Christ Himself as the person of the Savior who gave Himself, but rather points out the fact that the climax of His ministry and foundation of salvation was the giving of His life as a ransom for many (Mk 10:45)."¹¹

ROBERT L. SAUCY

"The ordinance of the Lord's Supper is a divinely appointed testimony from the believers heart to God respecting his trust in Christ's efficacious death. ...Here, then, is a testimony from the heart to God by which the Lord's death is shown forth, and one to continue 'till he come' again (1 Cor. 11:26), as the Jewish altar set forth Christ's death until He came the first time."¹²

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

"The very elements of the rite and the words of institution emphasize the communion as a remembrance of the death of Christ. This is not to overlook the fact that it is a 'remembrance of me,' that is, of Christ Himself as the person of the Savior who gave Himself, but rather points out the fact that the climax of His ministry and foundation of salvation was the giving of His life as a ransom for many (Mk 10:45)."¹³

ROBERT L. SAUCY

"The ordinance of the Lord's Supper is a divinely appointed testimony from the believers heart to God respecting his trust in Christ's efficacious death. ...Here, then, is a testimony from the heart to God by which the Lord's death is shown forth, and one to continue 'till he come' again (1 Cor. 11:26), as the Jewish altar set forth Christ's death until He came the first time."¹⁴

LEWIS SPERRY CHAFER

MATTHEW 27-28

Quotes

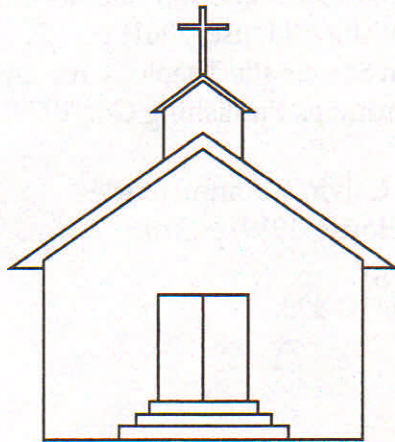
- ¹ As quoted by L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. IV* (Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1948) p. 38.
- ² John MacArthur Jr. *Body Dynamics* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1982) p. 15.
- ³ Robert L. Saucy. *The Church In God's Program* (Chicago: Moody Press, 1972) p. 16-17.
- ⁴ R. C. H. Lenski. *The Interpretation of St. Paul's Epistles to the Colossians, to the Thessalonians, to Timothy, to Titus and to Philemon* (Minneapolis: Augsburg Publishing House, 1961) p. 577.
- ⁵ Henry C. Thiessen. *Lectures In Systematic Theology* rev. by Vernon D. Doerksen (Grand Rapids: Eerdmans Publishing Co., 1979) pp. 320-21.
- ⁶ Saucy. *Ibid.*, p. 178.
- ⁷ John Calvin. *II Corinthians in Calvin's Commentaries* (Grand Rapids: Baker Book House, 1989) p. 310.
- ⁸ Charles C. Ryrie. *Basic Theology* (Wheaton: Victor Books, 1986) p. 430.
- ⁹ MacArthur. *Ibid.*, p. 129.
- ¹⁰ Thiessen. *Ibid.*, p. 324.
- ¹¹ Saucy. *Ibid.*, p. 218.
- ¹² L. S. Chafer. *Systematic Theology Vol. VII* (Dallas: Dallas Seminary Press, 1948) p. 229.
- ¹³ Saucy. *Ibid.*, p. 218.
- ¹⁴ Chafer. *Ibid.*, p. 229.



The Church

Εκκλησία – “THE CHURCH”

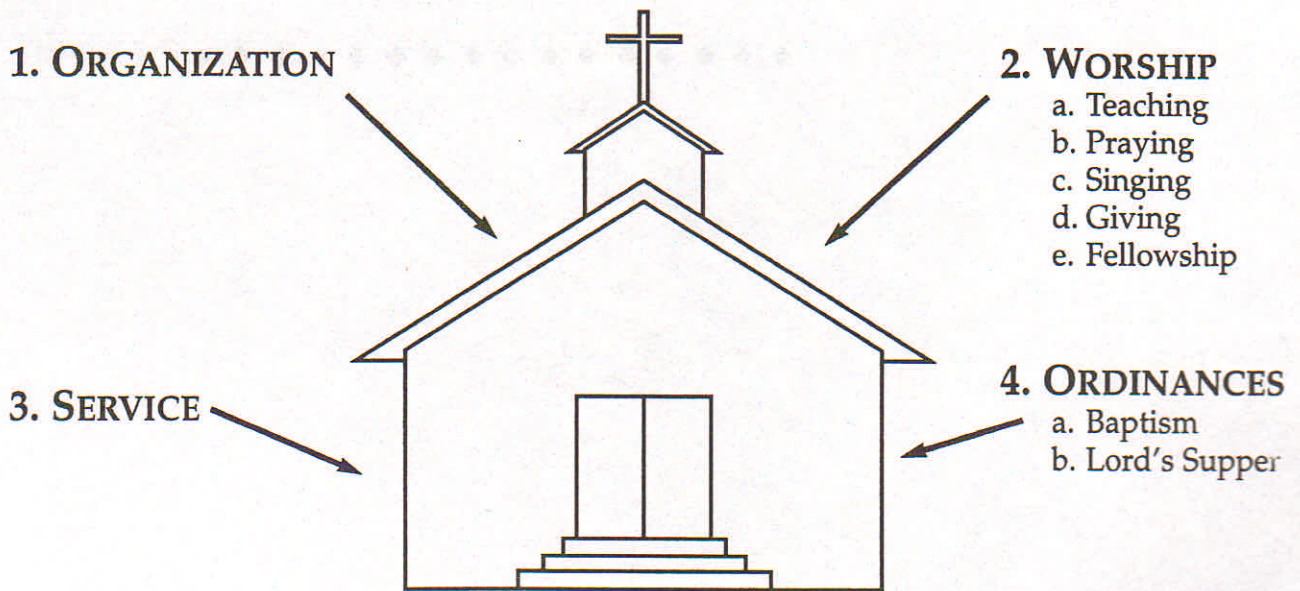
LOCAL CHURCH



UNIVERSAL CHURCH



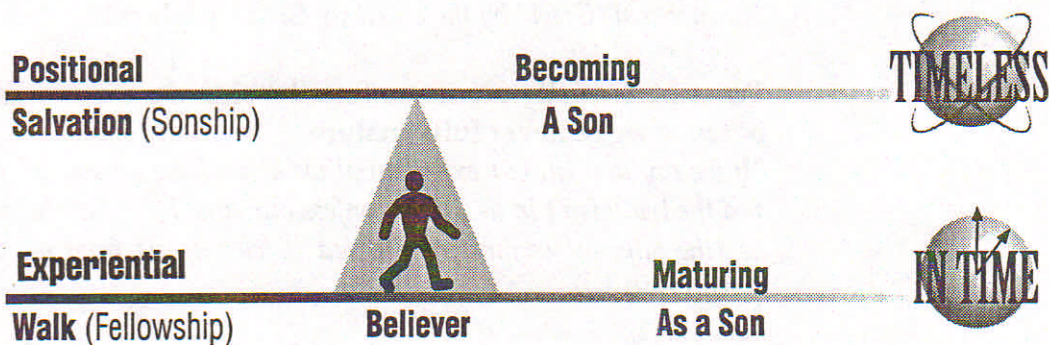
FUNCTIONS OF THE LOCAL CHURCH



"Not forsaking the assembling of yourselves together, as is the habit of some, but encouraging one another, and all the more, as you see the day drawing near." (Heb. 9: 25)

Positional & Experiential Truth

In discussing confession of sin we mentioned our position before God as opposed to our daily walk. These different levels of truth are called “experiential truth” and “positional truth.” This is a very important concept to grasp to prevent confusion as we read the New Testament. Not understanding these two levels of truth causes tremendous confusion over such passages as I John 1:9 and many others. The simple chart below will help us in our understanding.



Positional truth deals with our salvation and becoming a son of God. It is timeless. Experiential truth deals with our walk or fellowship as a believer and deals with maturing as a son. It occurs in time. This is clearly seen in the contrast given us in Dr. Mal Couch’s book *What Christianity Is All About*. He contrasts these levels of truth as follows:

Positional Truth

- **The positional level is timeless.**
“He chose us in [Christ] before the foundation of the world” (Eph. 1:5).
- **We are positionally in Christ.** “Chosen in Him”
- **We are positionally “Set Aside,” or “made special (Sanctified).**
“Those who have been sanctified in Christ” (I Cor. 1:2).
- **We are positionally sealed.**
“You were sealed in Christ by the promised Holy Spirit” (Eph. 1:13).
- **We positionally are in heaven.**
God ... who has blessed us in the heavenlies” (Eph. 1:3).



Experiential Truth

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹So he said to them, "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to him, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell in Galilee, there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief thing that had happened. chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money; "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of trouble." soldiers took the money were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven of Galilee, to the mount, had told them to go. ¹⁷And when they worshiped him, they worshiped, doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus said, "All authority on earth has been given to you, go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey all that I have commanded you." (Matt. 28:16-20)

- **The experiential level has to do with time.**
"So that you may walk in a manner worthy of the Lord, to please Him in all respects, bearing fruit in every good work..." (Col. 1:10).
- **We experientially are to walk with Christ.**
- **We experientially are to walk as children and sons.**
"We know that we are children of God " (I Jo. 5:19).
- **We experientially are to mature as a son.**
"Be matured (Greek) by the Spirit [of God]" (Eph. 5:18).
- **We experientially are to confess the sins we commit as God's child ... because we're never fully mature.**
"If we say that [in our experiential walk] we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth isn't in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us [the sins we commit daily] and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness" (I Jo. 1:8-9).¹

¹ Malcom O. Couch. *What Christianity Is All About* (Ft. Worth: Tyndale Theological Seminary, 1991) pp. 27-28.



The Basics ANSWERS TO CHAPTERS & SELF-TEST

MATTHEW 27-

tell his disciples.
em. "Greetings."
him, clasped his
sim. ¹⁰Then Jesus s
be afraid. Go and tell m
Gai... they will

Salvation

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w
some of the guards we
and reported to the chi
ing that had happen
chief priests had met wit
devised a plan, they gat
large sum of money.
You are to say, 'His
uring the night and
while we were asleep.'
ets to the governor, we
and keep you out of tr
oldiers took the money
ere instructed. And thi
widely circulated among
very day.

Assurance

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d
Galilee, to the mount
had told them to go. ¹⁷
im, they worshiped
oubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus
and said, "All authorit
on earth has been giv
ore go and make disc
ions, baptizing them i
the Father and of the
Holy Spirit, ²⁰and teach
everything I have com
erely I am with you al

CHAPTER 1 • SALVATION

holiness	none	demands	help	the substitute
evil	open grave	punishment	love	all
sin	no fear of God	wrath	helpless	satisfied
approve	all	Grace	love	just
favor	born in sin	unmerited	loved	faith
none	separated	charis	eternal life	trust
none	Sin	favor	die on the cross	confidence
none	all	gracious care	relationship	eternal life

CHAPTER 1 • TEST

holiness	none	separated	all	eternal life
evil	none	demands	satisfied	
sin	none	punishment	trust	
approve	all	unmerited favor	confidence	
favor	born in sin	the substitute	faith	

CHAPTER 2 • ASSURANCE

know	forgives	accounting	led	actions
Bible	credits	account book	guide	capacity
Holy Spirit	righteousness	place	reminding	physical
Transformed Life	all	bears witness	applying	spiritual
may know	reckoned	children	perfectly	
eternal life	we	peace	new nature	
has eternal life	righteousness of	acceptance	habits	
assures	God	forgiveness	thoughts	

CHAPTER 2 • TEST

Bible	credits	God	acceptance	thoughts
Holy Spirit	righteousness	accounting	forgiveness	actions
transformed life	all	account book	guide	physical
may know	future	place	new nature	spiritual
eternal life	reckoned	bears witness	reminding	
has eternal life	we	children	applying	
forgives	righteousness of	peace	habits	



Daily Time With God

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Send them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet to him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell in to Galilee; there they will

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women were some of the guards we and reported to the chief priests had met with devised a plan, they gave large sum of money, "You are to say, 'This during the night and while we were asleep,' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of to soldiers. They were instructed. And this widely circulated among very day.

Prayer Life

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven in Galilee, to the mountain had told them to go. ¹⁷And him, they worshiped and doubted. ¹⁸Then Jesus and said, "All authority on earth has been given fore go and make disciples, baptizing them in the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everything I have commanded you to do with you all

CHAPTER 3 • DAILY TIME WITH GOD

physically	night	special	acceptable	Thy-command-
milk	talk	lonely place	sin nature	ments
spiritually	guidelines	consistent	ungodly	Thy word
long	shoulder	prayer	brought	sin
word	ear	Bible	line	feeding
grow	conversation	scripture	eternal truth	mind
salvation	Omnipresence	Master	Scripture	heart
spend time	always	supreme	knowledge	every word
words	whenever	conformed	against	
meditate	wherever	transformed	quoted	
day	Spontaneous	good	Thy word	

CHAPTER 3 • TEST

long	ear	prayer	good	mind
word	Omnipresence	Bible	acceptable	heart
grow	always	scripture	sin nature	every word
salvation	whenever	Master	ungodly	
spend time	wherever	supreme	Thy word	
guidelines	Spontaneous	conformed	sin	
shoulder	lonely place	transformed	feeding	

CHAPTER 4 • PRAYER LIFE

Omnipresence	concentrate	God's attributes	experience	No
always	consistent	own	position	Later
whenever	brief	thanksgiving	Confession	sovereign plan
wherever	lengthy	confession	prayer	confidence
Spontaneous	circumstances	confess	another	children
special	prize	forgive	earnest	mediator
lonely place	favorable	cleanse	asked	reverence
rested	judgment	walk	all	
alert	glorify	fellowship	Christ Jesus	

CHAPTER 4 • TEST

always	lengthy	God's attributes	prayer	No
whenever	confession	own	another	Later
wherever	petition	thanksgiving	loving	sovereign plan
rested	prize	confess	earnest	confidence
alert	favorable	forgive	asked	children
concentrate	judgment	cleanse	all	reverence
brief	glorify	Confession	Christ Jesus	

Personal Bible Study

MATTHEW 27-28

CHAPTER 5 • PERSONAL BIBLE STUDY

- | | | | |
|---------------|---------------|-----------------|-------------|
| conformed | maturity | sweat | transform |
| transformed | physical | dig deep | Holy Spirit |
| good | spiritual | several | Christlike |
| acceptable | good | context | wholly |
| sin nature | evil | main unit | wholly |
| ungodly | teaching | central | |
| growth | correction | main theme | |
| maturity | righteousness | original | |
| effectiveness | cast light | them | |
| knowledge | mind | life principles | |
| stature | work | curiosity | |

CHAPTER 5 • TEST

- | | | | |
|---------------|----------------|-------------|-------------|
| sin nature | individual | author | attitudes |
| ungodly | main theme | Application | actions |
| growth | interpretation | applying | Holy Spirit |
| maturity | original | curiosity | |
| effectiveness | significance | transform | |
| observation | interpretative | Bible | |
| preliminary | research | Bible | |

CHAPTER 6 • SCRIPTURE MEMORIZATION

- | | | | |
|---------------|-----------|----------------|--------------|
| eternal truth | sin | victory | issue |
| Scripture | does not | worry | topical |
| knowledge | stand | confidence | note card |
| against | delight | transforming | writing |
| quoted | meditates | will | Review |
| Thy word | heart | service | meditate |
| Thy- command- | soul | Bible study | meditates |
| ments | hand | misunderstand- | relationship |
| Thy word | forehead | ing | life long |

CHAPTER 6 • TEST

- | | | |
|-----------|-------------|---------------|
| knowledge | hand | reference |
| against | forehead | phrases |
| quoted | victory | ponder |
| Thy word | overcoming | meditating |
| sin | personal | relationships |
| heart | issue | life long |
| soul | perspective | |

Scripture Memorization

The Great Commission

16 Then the eleven d
Galilee, to the mount
had told them to go. 17
him, they worshiped
doubted. 18 Then Jesus
nd said, "All authority
on earth has been giver
fore go and make disci
ons, baptizing them i
the Father and of the
Holy Spirit. 19 and teach
everything. 20 And com

Confession Of Sin

Matthew 27-28

to tell his disciples. "Suc-
them. "Greetings," he s
to him, clasped his feet
him. "Then Jesus said to
be afraid. Go and tell m
to Galilee; there they wil

The Guards' Report

"While the women w
some of the guards we
and reported to the chi
thing that had happen
chief priests had met wit
devised a plan, they ga
large sum of money.
"You are to say, 'This
during the night and
while we were asleep,'
gets to the governor, w
and keep you out of t
soldiers took the money
were

Dealing With Temptation

The Great Commission

"Then the eleven d
Galilee, to the mount,
had told them to go. "I
him, they worshiped
doubted. "Then Jesus
and said, "All authorit
on earth has been giv
fore go and make dis
tions, baptizing them i
the Father and of the
Holy Spirit. "and teach
all things that I have com

CHAPTER 7 • CONFESSION OF SIN

fears	forgive	unconfessed
faith	cleanse	forgiveness
imputed	say	as soon
unconfessed	admit	immediately
discipline	walk	fellowship
fellowship	fellowship	reconciliation
confession	experience	Father
confession	position	children
cleanse	admit	Confessing
renew	Confession	forgiving
confess	confess	

CHAPTER 7 • TEST

disciplines	cleanse	Confession
fears	say	immediately
fellowship	admit	Confessing
cleanse	interests	forgiving
renew	desires	
confess	our	
forgive	Fatheris	

CHAPTER 8 • DEALING WITH TEMPTATION

tempt	world	enmity	within	perceptive
enticement	world	divine	evil desire	sin
temptation	moral	identified	destroyed	power
World	ideals	devil	destroyed	Spirit
Flesh	entertainments	without	dependence	victory
Devil	attitudes	others	opportunities	flee
world	standards	escape	growth	fled
world	fallen nature	sin	escape	object
world	fallen	obey	weakness	relationship

CHAPTER 8 • TEST

tempt	fallen nature	growth
enticement	devil	escape
Temptation	not	alert
World	within	power
Flesh	evil desire	fleeing
Devil	dependence	object
moral	opportunities	relationship

The Spirit-filled Life

CHAPTER 9 • THE SPIRIT-FILLED LIFE

regeneration	influence	Spirit	filling	Walk
Spirit-filled	controlled	Word	never	confession
time	controlled	filling	grieve	dedication
natural	continually	baptism	grieves	
spiritual	controlled	identification	quench	
fleshly	Christ	filling	resisting	
control	Holy Spirit	Baptism	unyielded	

CHAPTER 9 • TEST

regeneration	fleshly	baptism	never	dedication
Spirit-filled	controlled	identification	grieve	peace
time	continually	filling	quench	joy
natural	controlled	Baptism	walk	Christlike
spiritual	filling	filling	confession	

CHAPTER 10 • OBEDIENCE

keep	eternal	judgment seat	commands	sincere
keep	makes sense	own	equip	sincere
submissive	best	God	power	alert
outward	lead	flesh	empowered	power
legalism	commanded	Know	enables	fleeing
inward	obedience	Draw	our	destroying
desperate	accountable	Have	responsibility	investing
hope	assessed	Learn	responsibility	

CHAPTER 10 • TEST

submissive	makes sense	enables	alert	investing
inward	commanded	our	power	
redeeming	accountable	sincere	fleeing	
forgiving	commands	sincere	destroying	

CHAPTER 11 • GOD'S DISCIPLINE

neglect	chastisement	proof	perfection	Preventative
upbringing	correction	total	holiness	Corrective
chastisement	persecution	subjection	sanctification	Enlarging
Whipping	growth	submissive-	pleasant	Vindictive
spanking	love	attitude	fully trained	
beat	obedient	lifetime	maturity	

CHAPTER 11 • TEST

neglect	spanking	love	perfection	maturity
upbringing	beat	proof	holiness	corrective
chastisement	correction	subjection	fully trained	enlarging

Developing Godly Habits Of Living

to tell us. 9 Succumb to them. "Greetings," he said to him, clasped his feet around his neck, and kissed him. 10 Then Jesus said to him, "Do not be afraid. Go and tell my brothers to go to Galilee; there they will meet you, and then they will go with you to Jerusalem."

The Guards' Report

11 While the women were on their way, some of the guards went to the chief priests and reported to them the things that had happened. When the chief priests had conspired with the elders and scribes to kill Jesus, they devised a plan. They gave the guards a large sum of money, saying, "You are to say, 'His disciples got us drunk during the night and while we were asleep, they murdered him; and they got to the governor, and we said, 'Keep him out of town, for the soldiers took the money.'"

Knowing God's Will

The Great Commission

16 Then the eleven disciples went to Galilee, to the mountain that Jesus had told them to go to. When they saw him, they worshiped him, but some doubted. 18 Then Jesus said to them, "All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me. Therefore go and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit, and teaching them to obey everything I have commanded you. And remember, I am with you always, to the end of the age."

CHAPTER 12 • DEVELOPING GODLY HABITS OF LIVING

consistently	flesh	patterns
consecration	Spirit	persistence
dedicated	desire	dependence
control	continually	overcome
control	renewing	persistent
developed	choice	
exercise	empower	
rules	life principles	
godliness	curiosity	
character	transform	
transformed	meditate	

CHAPTER 12 • TEST

consecrate	continually	persistence
dedicated	life principles	overcome
pursue	curiosity	
character	transform	
fallen	meditate	
new	patterns	
choice	dependence	

CHAPTER 13 • KNOWING GOD'S WILL

will	Lord	conflict	humbly	Ahead
renewing	Lord	Suffering	Pray	Advice
desire	Sexual	testing	direct	clouded
moral	homosexuality	sanctification	peace	emotions
ethical	fornication	resting	assurance	Wait
Reaction	abstain	rest	Think Through	all-knowing
repentance	marriage	Elders	within	
Job	Citizenship	shepherd	discern	
employee-	model	supplying	deliver	
employer	submission	protecting	walk	

CHAPTER 13 • TEST

renewing	marriage	humbly
moral	rest	praying
ethical	model	thinking through
repentance	submission	ahead
employee-	shepherd	advice
employer	supplying	waiting
abstain	protecting	

Stewardship

MATTHEW 27-28

to tell his disciples. ⁹Such them. "Greetings," he s to him, clasped his feet him. ¹⁰Then Jesus said to be afraid. Go and tell m to Galilee; there they wil

The Guards' Report

¹¹While the women w some of the guards we and reported to the chi thing that had happen chief priests had met wit devised a plan, they gav large sum of money, "You are to say, 'His during the night and while we were asleep.' gets to the governor, we and keep you out of tr soldiers took the money were **The Church** thi widely circulated among very day.

The Great Commission

¹⁶Then the eleven d Galilee, to the mount had told them to go. ¹⁷ him, they worshiped doubted. ¹⁸Then lesus and said, "All authority on earth has been giver fore go and make disc tions, baptizing them i the Father and of the Holy Spirit. ²⁰and teach everywhere I have comm sion. ²¹Go and baptize al

CHAPTER 14 • STEWARDSHIP

it all	condemned
owned	tongues
managers	destruction
God-given	abomination
goals	maturity
ourselves	heart
gifts	mind
possessions	inner
sexual	enter
immorality	prohibited
heterosexual	spiritual gifts

sovereignty	spiritual
undeserved	budget
carnal	
meditate	
obedient	
handle	
temporal	
eternal	
2,000	
security	
fallacy	

CHAPTER 14 • TEST

it all	destruction	temporal
owned	abomination	eternal
managers	enter	security
ourselves	sovereignty	fallacy
gifts	undeserved	spiritual
possessions	meditate	
heterosexual	obedient	

CHAPTER 15 • THE CHURCH

ekklesia	elders
residence	feed
salvation	servant
local	teaching
universal	material
identified	anywhere
organization	insincere
corporate	doctrinal
ministry	Epistles

heart	fellowship	equipped
jail	relationship	gifts
Singing	make disciples	
giving	baptized	
love	Baptism	
prosperity	memorial	
voluntarily	entire	
liberally	all	
relationship	lifestyle	

CHAPTER 15 • TEST

ekklesia	insincere
local	elder
universal	servant
identified	teaching
organization	material
corporate	heart
ministry	memorial

within
unsaved
body
sphere